



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

YPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



433 07609626 6



WCP  
Spencer







THE  
COMPLETE WORKS  
IN  
VERSE AND PROSE  
OF  
EDMUND SPENSER.

*VOL. VII.*

THE FAERIE QUEENE:

BOOK III. CANT. xi.—xii., BOOK IIII. CANT. i.—xii.,  
AND BOOK V. CANT. i.—vii.

1590-96.

Spenser





THE  
COMPLETE WORKS  
IN  
VERSE AND PROSE  
OF  
EDMUND SPENSER.

*EDITED, WITH A NEW LIFE, BASED ON ORIGINAL RESEARCHES,  
AND A GLOSSARY EMBRACING NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS*

BY THE  
REV. ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A.,  
*St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire;*

IN ASSOCIATION WITH

PROFESSOR ANGUS, LL.D., LONDON.  
THE REV. THOMAS ASHE, M.A.,  
CREWE.  
PROFESSOR CHILD, LL.D., HARVARD  
UNIVERSITY, CAMBRIDGE, U.S.A.  
THE RIGHT HONBLE. THE LORD  
CHIEF JUSTICE OF ENGLAND.  
PROFESSOR EDWARD DOWDEN,  
LL.D., TRINITY COLLEGE, DUBLIN.  
EDMUND W. GOSSE, ESQ., LONDON.  
THE REV. WILLIAM HUBBARD,  
MANCHESTER.  
PROFESSOR HENRY MORLEY, LL.D.,  
LONDON.

DR. BRINSLEY NICHOLSON,  
LONDON.  
GEORGE SAINTSBURY, ESQ.,  
LONDON.  
FRANCIS TURNER PALGRAVE,  
ESQ., LL.D., LONDON.  
AUBREY DE VERE, ESQ., CURRAGH  
CHASE, ADARE.  
PROFESSOR WARD, M.A., OWENS COL-  
LEGE, MANCHESTER.  
THE REV. RICHARD WILTON, M.A.,  
LONDESBOROUGH RECTORY.  
WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT, ESQ.,  
M.A., LL.D., TRINITY COLL., CAMB.

ETC.

ETC.

ETC.

*IN EIGHT VOLUMES.*

VOL. VII.

THE FAERIE QUEENE:

BOOK III. CANT. xi.—xii., BOOK IIII. CANT. i.—xii.,  
AND BOOK V. CANT. i.—vii. (1596.)

WITH VARIOUS READINGS OF 1590, ETC., ETC.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.

1882.

100 copies only.]

n -

7498 -



---

*Hazell, Watson, and Viney, Printers, London and Glasgow.*

WATSON  
HARVEY  
HARVEY

# CONTENTS OF VOL. VII.

---

## THE FAERIE QUEENE (*continued*):—

### BOOK III.

#### CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS, OR OF CHASTITY (*continued*).

	PAGE
Canto XI. . . . .	1
„ XII. . . . .	20

### BOOK IIII.

#### CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF CAMBEL AND TRIAMOND, OR OF FRIENDSHIP.

Canto I. . . . .	42
„ II. . . . .	60
„ III. . . . .	78
„ IIII. . . . .	95
„ V. . . . .	111
„ VI. . . . .	126
„ VII. . . . .	142
„ VIII. . . . .	158
„ IX. . . . .	179
„ X. . . . .	193
„ XI. . . . .	212
„ XII. . . . .	229

### BOOK V.

#### CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF ARTEGALL, OR OF IVSTICE.

Canto I. . . . .	245
„ II. . . . .	255
„ III. . . . .	273
„ IIII. . . . .	286
„ V. . . . .	303
„ VI. . . . .	321
„ VII. . . . .	335

In large paper copies (post 4to) a steel portrait of Spenser by Alais, from a contemporary miniature in the possession of Lord Fitzhardinge, inherited through the marriage of a Berkeley with Lady E. Carey, heiress of the Hunsdons, to whom it was left by Queen Elizabeth, —never before engraved. See further account of this and of all our engraved portraits and all others, in the Memoir in Vol. I.

*To face title-page.*



Book III.—Cant. XI.



O Hatefull hellish Snake, what furie furst  
Brought thee from balefull house of *Proserpine*,  
Where in her bosome she thee long had nurst,  
And fostred vp with bitter milke of tine,  
Fowle Gealofie, that turnest loue diuine 10  
To ioyleffe dread, and mak'ft the louing hart  
With hatefull thoughts to languish and to pine,  
And feed it selfe with selfe-consuming smart?  
Of all the passions in the mind thou vilest art.

O let him far be banished away,  
And in his stead let Loue for euer dwell,  
Sweet Loue, that doth his golding wings embay  
In blessed Nectar, and pure Pleasures well,

l. 5, 'loues': l. 10, 'Gealofy': l. 17, 'sweete': *ib.*, 'golding' is changed to 'golden' in 1609.

Vntroubled of vile feare, or bitter fell.  
 And ye faire Ladies, that your kingdomes make 20  
 In th'harts of men, them gouerne wifely well,  
 And of faire *Britomart* enfample take,  
 That was as trew in loue, as Turtle to her make.

Who with Sir *Satyrane*, as earst ye red,  
 Forth ryding from *Malbeccoes* hostlesse hous,  
 Far off apyde a young man, the which fled  
 From an huge Geaunt, that with hideous  
 And / hatefull outrage long him chaced thus ;  
 It was that *Ollyphant*, the brother deare  
 Of that *Argante* vile and vitious, 30  
 From whom the *Squire of Dames* was rest whylere ;  
 This all as bad as she, and worse, if worse ought were.

For as the sifter did in feminine  
 And filthy lust excede all woman kind,  
 So he furpassed his sex masculine,  
 In beastly vse that I did euer find ;  
 Whom when as *Britomart* beheld behind  
 The fearefull boy so greedily pursfew,  
 She was emmoued in her noble mind,  
 T'employ her puissaunce to his reskew, 40  
 And pricked fiercely forward, where she him did vew.

Ne was Sir *Satyrane* her far behinde,  
 But with like fiercenesse did ensue the chace :  
 Whom when the Gyaunt saw, he soone refinde  
 His former suit, and from them fled apace ;

l. 31, '*Squyre*': l. 34, '*womankinde*,' and so '*e*' in rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 36, '*vse, all that I euer*': l. 38, '*pursfew*.'

They after both, and boldly bad him bace,  
 And each did striue the other to out-goe,  
 But he them both outran a wondrous space,  
 For he was long, and swift as any Roe,  
 And now made better speed, t'escape his feared foe. 50

It was not *Satyrane*, whom he did feare,  
 But *Britomart* the flowre of chastity;  
 For he the powre of chaste hands might not beare,  
 But alwayes did their dread encounter fly:  
 And now so fast his feet he did apply,  
 That he has gotten to a forrest neare,  
 Where he is shrowded in security.  
 The wood they enter, and search euery where,  
 They searched diuerfely, so both diuided were. /

Faire *Britomart* so long him followed, 60  
 That she at last came to a fountaine sheare,  
 By which there lay a knight all wallowed  
 Vpon the grassy ground, and by him neare  
 His haberieon, his helmet, and his speare;  
 A little off, his shield was rudely throwne,  
 On which the winged boy in colours cleare  
 Depeincted was, full easie to be knowne,  
 And he thereby, where euer it in field was showne.

His face vpon the ground did groueling ly,  
 As if he had bene slombring in the shade, 70  
 That the braue Mayd would not for courtesy,  
 Out of his quiet slomber him abraide,

l. 47, 'outgoe': l. 56, 'has' is 'was' in 1611: l. 58, 'eu.rie': l. 60, 'Fayre': l. 65, 'of': l. 69, 'grownd': l. 70, 'beene.'



Nor seeme too suddainly him to inuade :  
 Still as she stood, she heard with grieuous throb  
 Him grone, as if his hart were peeces made,  
 And with most painefull pangs to sigh and sob,  
 That pitty did the Virgins hart of patience rob.

At last forth breaking into bitter plaintes  
 He said ; *ô* soueraigne Lord that sit'st on hye,  
 And raignt in blis emongst thy blessed Saintes, 80  
 How suffrest thou such shamefull cruelty,  
 So long vnwreaked of thine enemy?  
 Or hast, thou Lord, of good mens cause no heed ?  
 Or doth thy iustice sleepe, and silent ly ?  
 What booteth then the good and righteous deed,  
 If goodnesse find no grace, nor righteounesse no meed?

If good find grace, and righteounesse reward,  
 Why then is *Amoret* in caytiue band,  
 Sith that more bounteous creature neuer far'd  
 On foot, vpon the face of liuing land ? 90  
 Or / if that heauenly iustice may withstand  
 The wrongfull outrage of vnrighteous men,  
 Why then is *Busirane* with wicked hand  
 Suffred, these feuen monethes day in secret den  
 My Lady and my loue so cruelly to pen ?

My Lady and my loue is cruelly pend  
 In dolefull darkenesse from the vew of day,  
 Whilest deadly torments do her chaste brest rend,  
 And the sharpe steele doth riue her hart in tway,

l. 79, '*Jayd, O Jouerayne*': l. 86, '*righteounes,*' and so l. 87 : l. 91, '*heuenly,*' and so l. 125 : l. 97, '*darkenes*': l. 98, '*doe.*'

All for the *Scudamore* will not deny. 100  
 Yet thou vile man, vile *Scudamore* art found,  
 Ne canst her ayde, ne canst her foe difmay :  
 Vnworthy wretch to tread vpon the ground,  
 For whom so faire a Lady feeles so fore a wound.

There an huge heape of fingulfes did oppresse  
 His strugling soule, and swelling throbs empeach  
 His foltring tounge with pangs of drerinesse,  
 Choking the remnant of his plaintife speech,  
 As if his dayes were come to their last reach.  
 Which when she heard, and saw the ghastly fit, 110  
 Threatning into his life to make a breach,  
 Both with great ruth and terrour she was smit,  
 Fearing leaft from her cage the wearie soule would flit.

Tho stooping downe she him amoued light ;  
 Who therewith somewhat starting, vp gan looke,  
 And seeing him behind a straunger knight,  
 Whereas no liuing creature he mistooke,  
 With great indignaunce he that fight forfooke,  
 And downe againe himselfe disdainefully  
 Abiecting, th'earth with his faire forehead strooke : 120  
 Which the bold Virgin seeing, gan apply  
 Fit medicine to his grieve, and spake thus courtesly. /

Ah gentle knight, whose deepe conceiued grieve  
 Well seemes t'exceede the powre of patience,  
 Yet if that heauenly grace some good reliefe  
 You send, submit you to high prouidence,

l. 105, '*fingulfes*' is '*fingults*' in 1609—see Glossary s.v. : l. 116, '*stranger*' : l. 120, , after '*Abiecting*' accepted from '90 : l. 123, '*conceiued*' (misprint '96).

And euer in your noble hart prepenſe,  
 That all the forrow in the world is leſſe,  
 Then vertues might, and values confidence,  
 For who nill bide the burden of diſtreſſe, 130  
 Muſt not here thinke to liue : for life is wretchedneſſe.

Therefore, faire Sir, do comfort to you take,  
 And freely read, what wicked felon ſo  
 Hath outrag'd you, and thrald your gentle make.  
 Perhaps this hand may helpe to eaſe your woe,  
 And wreake your forrow on your cruell foe,  
 At leaſt it faire endeuour will apply.  
 Thoſe feeling wordes ſo neare the quicke did goe,  
 That vp his head he reared eaſily,  
 And leaning on his elbow, theſe few wordes let fly. 140

What boots it plaine, that cannot be redreſt,  
 And ſow vaine forrow in a fruitleſſe eare,  
 Sith powre of hand, nor ſkill of learned breſt,  
 Ne worldly price cannot redeeme my deare,  
 Out of her thraldome and continuall feare ?  
 For he the tyraunt, which her hath in ward  
 By ſtrong enchauntments and blacke Magicke leare,  
 Hath in a dungeon deepe her cloſe embard,  
 And many dreadfull feends hath pointed to her gard.

There he tormenteth her moſt terribly, 150  
 And day and night afflicts with mortall paine,  
 Becauſe to yield him loue ſhe doth deny,  
 Once to me yold, not to be yold againe :

l. 137, 'At' is misprinted 'And' in '96: l. 138, 'words': l. 140, 'elbowe . . . lett': l. 142, 'fruitleſſe' is misprinted in '96 'fruitleſſe': l. 146, 'tyrant': l. 153, 'yolde' (2nd).

But / yet by torture he would her constraine  
 Loue to conceiue in her disdainfull brest ;  
 Till so she do, she must in doole remaine,  
 Ne may by liuing meanes be thence relest :  
 What boots it then to plaine, that cannot be redrest ?

With this sad herfall of his heauy stresse,  
 The warlike Damzell was empaffiond fore, 160  
 And said ; Sir knight, your cause is nothing lesse,  
 Then is your sorrow, certes if not more ;  
 For nothing so much pittie doth implore,  
 As gentle Ladies helplesse misery.  
 But yet, if please ye listen to my lore,  
 I will with prooffe of last extremity,  
 Deliuier her fro thence, or with her for you dy.

Ah gentlest knight aliue, (said *Scudamore*)  
 What huge heroicke magnanimity (more,  
 Dwels in thy bounteous brest ? what couldst thou  
 If she were thine, and thou as now am I ? 171  
 O spare thy happy dayes, and them apply  
 To better boot, but let me dye, that ought ;  
 More is more losse : one is enough to dy.  
 Life is not lost, (said she) for which is bought  
 Endlesse renowm, that more then death is to be fought.

Thus she at length perswaded him to rise,  
 And with her wend, to see what new successe  
 Mote him befall vpon new enterprife ;  
 His armes, which he had vowed to disprofesse, 180

l. 155, ; for ,—accepted : l. 156, 'doe' : l. 161, 'sayd,' and so l. 168 :  
*ib.*, , for ; : l. 164, 'Ladies' : l. 170, 'dwels' : l. 172, 'daies' : l. 173,  
 'die' : l. 176, 'death'—Jortin suggests 'life' : l. 177, 'thee . . . , perswaded.'

She gathered vp and did about him dresse,  
 And his forwardred steed vnto him got :  
 So forth they both yfere make their progresse,  
 And march not past the mountenaunce of a shot.  
 Till they arriu'd, whereas their purpose they did plot. /

There they difmounting, drew their weapons bold  
 And stoutly came vnto the Castle gate ;  
 Whereas no gate they found, them to withhold,  
 Nor ward to wait at morne and eucning late,  
 But in the Porch, that did them fore amate, 190  
 A flaming fire, ymixt with smouldry smoke,  
 And stinking Sulphure, that with griesly hate  
 And dreadfull horror did all entraunce choke,  
 Enforced them their forward footing to reuoke.

Greatly thereat was *Britomart* difmayd,  
 Ne in that stownd wist, how her selfe to beare ;  
 For daunger vaine it were, to haue assayd  
 That cruell element, which all things feare,  
 Ne none can suffer to approchen neare :  
 And turning backe to *Scudamour*, thus sayd ; 200  
 What monstrous enmity prouoke we heare,  
 Foolhardy as th'Earthes children, the which made  
 Battell against the Gods ? so we a God inuade.

Daunger without difcretion to attempt,  
 Inglorious and beaftlike is : therefore Sir knight,  
 Aread what course of you is safest dempt,  
 And how we with our foe may come to fight.

l. 182, '*forwarded*' is in '96 misprinted as two words : *ib.*, '*gott*,' and so double *t* in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 193, '*horror*' : l. 202, , after '*Foolhardy*,' and no '*the*' : l. 203, '*Batteill*' : l. 205, '*and*' is removed in 1611 : but Spenser was no Purist in either rhyme or rhythm.

This (quoth he) the dolorous despight,  
 Which earst to you I playnd : for neither may  
 This fire be quencht by any wit or might, 210  
 Ne yet by any meanes remou'd away,  
 So mighty be th'enchautments, which the same do stay.

What is there else, but cease these fruitlesse paines,  
 And leaue to me my former languishing ;  
 Faire *Amoret* must dwell in wicked chaines,  
 And *Scudamore* here dye with sorrowing.  
 Perdy / not so ; (said she) for shamefull thing  
 It were t'abandon noble cheuifaunce,  
 For shew of perill, without venturing :  
 Rather let try extremities of chaunce, 220  
 Then enterprised prayse for dread to disauaunce.

Therewith resolu'd to proue her vtmost might,  
 Her ample shield she threw before her face,  
 And her swords point directing forward right,  
 Affayld the flame, the which eftsoones gaue place,  
 And did it selfe diuide with equall space,  
 That through she passed ; as a thunder bolt  
 Perceth the yielding ayre, and doth displace  
 The foring clouds into fad showres ymolt ;  
 So to her yold the flames, and did their force reuolt,

Whom whenas *Scudamour* saw past the fire, 231  
 Safe and vntoucht, he likewise gan assay,  
 With greedy will, and enuious desire,  
 And bad the stubborne flames to yield him way :

l. 210, 'witt' : l. 213, 'ells,' is misprinted in '96 'elfe' : l. 216, 'die' :  
 l. 217, 'saide shee . . . shamefull' : l. 219, 'shewe' : l. 221, 'praise' : l. 227,  
 , for ; : *ib.*, 'thonder.'

But cruell *Mulciber* would not obay  
 His threatfull pride, but did the more augment  
 Hjs mighty rage, and imperious sway  
 Him forst (maulgre) his fiercenesse to relent,  
 And backe retire, all scorcht and pitifully brent.

With huge impatience he inly fwelt, 240  
 More for great sorrow, that he could not pas,  
 Then for the burning torment, which he felt,  
 That with fell woodnesse he effierced was,  
 And wilfully him throwing on the gras,  
 Did beat and bounse his head and brest full fore ;  
 The whiles the Championesse now entred has  
 The vtmost rowme, and past the formeſt dore,  
 The vtmost rowme, abounding with all precious store./

For round about, the wals yclothed were  
 With goodly arras of great maieſty, 250  
 Wouen with gold and ſilke ſo cloſe and nere,  
 That the rich metall lurked priuily,  
 As faining to be hid from enuious eye ;  
 Yet here, and there, and euery where vnwares  
 It ſhewd it ſelfe, and ſhone vnwillingly ;  
 Like a diſcolourd Snake, whoſe hidden ſnares  
 Through the greene gras his long bright burniſht backe  
 declares.

And in thoſe Tapets weren faſhioned  
 Many faire pourtraiſts, and many a faire feate,  
 And all of loue, and all of luſty-hed, 260  
 As ſeemed by their ſemblaunt did entreat ;

l. 238, '*fercenes*': l. 243, '*woodnes*': l. 245, '*ful*': l. 246, '*decked*'  
 [*sic*]: l. 249, '*walls*': l. 253, '*hidd*': l. 256, '*Like to a*'

And eke all *Cupids* warres they did repeate,  
 And cruell battels, which he whilome fought  
 Gainst all the Gods, to make his empire great ;  
 Besides the huge massacres, which he wrought  
 On mighty kings and kefars, into thraldome brought.

Therein was writ, how often thundring *Ioue*  
 Had felt the point of his hart-percing dart,  
 And leauing heauens kingdome, here did roue 269  
 In straunge disguise, to slake his scalding smart ;  
 Now like a Ram, faire *Helle* to peruart,  
 Now like a Bull, *Europa* to withdraw :  
 Ah, how the fearefull Ladies tender hart  
 Did liuely seeme to tremble, when she saw  
 The huge seas vnder her t'obay her seruauents law.

Soone after that into a golden showre  
 Him selfe he chaung'd faire *Danaë* to vew,  
 And through the roofe of her strong brasen towre  
 Did raine into her lap an hony dew,  
 The / whiles her foolish garde, that little knew 280  
 Of such deceit, kept th'yron dore fast bard,  
 And watcht, that none should enter nor isswe ;  
 Vaine was the watch, and bootlesse all the ward,  
 Whenas the God to golden hew him selfe transfard.

Then was he turnd into a snowy Swan,  
 To win faire *Leda* to his louely trade:  
 O wondrous skill, and sweet wit of the man,  
 That her in daffadillies sleeping made,

l. 263, 'battailes': l. 267, 'writt . . . thondring': l. 268, no - : l. 278,  
 'But': l. 280, 'lille.



From scorching heat her daintie limbes to shade :  
 Whiles the proud Bird ruffing his fethers wyde, 290  
 And brushing his faire brest, did her inuade ;  
 She slept, yet twixt her eyelids closely spyde,  
 How towards her he rusht, and smiled at his pryde.

Then shewd it, how the *Thebane Semelee*  
 Deceiu'd of gealous *Iuno*, did require  
 To see him in his soueraigne maiestee,  
 Armd with his thunderbolts and lightning fire,  
 Whence dearely she with death bought her desire.  
 But faire *Alcmena* better match did make,  
 Ioying his loue in likenesse more entire ; 300  
 Three nights in one, they say, that for her sake  
 He then did put, her pleasures lenger to partake.

Twife was he seene in soaring Eagles shape,  
 And with wide wings to beat the buxome ayre,  
 Once, when he with *Asterie* did scape,  
 Againe, when as the *Troiane* boy so faire  
 He snatcht from *Ida* hill, and with him bare :  
 Wondrous delight it was, there to behould,  
 How the rude Shepheards after him did stare,  
 Trembling through feare, leaft down he fallen should,  
 And often to him calling, to take furer hould. / 311

In *Satyres* shape *Antiopa* he snatcht :  
 And like a fire, when he *Aegin'* assayd :  
 A shepheard, when *Mnemofyne* he catcht ;  
 And like a Serpent to the *Thracian* mayd.

l. 292, 'Shee . . . eyelids': l. 295, 'Deceiud': l. 296, 'soueraigne': l. 298, 'Whens': l. 300, 'likenes,' and , for ;: l. 302, 'her' is 'his' in 1609 ineptly: l. 304, 'winges': l. 306, 'fayre': l. 314, 'shepheard.'

Whiles thus on earth great *Ioue* these pageaunts  
 The winged boy did thrust into his throne, (playd,  
 And scoffing, thus vnto his mother sayd,  
 Lo now the heauens obey to me alone,  
 And take me for their *Ioue*, whiles *Ioue* to earth is gone.

And thou, faire *Phæbus*, in thy colours bright 321  
 Wast there enwouen, and the sad distresse,  
 In which that boy thee plunged, for despight,  
 That thou bewray'dst his mothers wantonneffe,  
 When she with *Mars* was meynt in ioyfulnesse :  
 For thy, he thrild thee with a leaden dart,  
 To loue faire *Daphne*, which thee loued lesse :  
 Lesse she thee lou'd, then was thy iust defart,  
 Yet was thy loue her death, & her death was thy smart.

So louedst thou the lusty *Hyacinth*, 330  
 So louedst thou the faire *Coronis* deare :  
 Yet both are of thy haplesse hand extinct,  
 Yet both in flowres do liue, and loue thee beare,  
 The one a Pounce, the other a sweet breare :  
 For grieve whereof, ye mote haue liuely seene  
 The God himselfe rending his golden heare,  
 And breaking quite his gyrlond euer greene,  
 With other signes of sorrow and impatient teene.

Both for those two, and for his owne deare sonne,  
 The sonne of *Climene* he did repent, 340  
 Who bold to guide the charet of the Sunne,  
 Himselfe in thousand peeces fondly rent,

l. 319, 'heuens' : l. 326, , added after 'thy' : l. 327, 'the' : l. 333, 'doe.'

And / all the world with flashing fier brent,  
 So like, that all the walles did seeme to flame.  
 Yet cruell *Cupid*, not herewith content,  
 Forst him eftsoones to follow other game,  
 And loue a Shepherds daughter for his dearest Dame.

He loued *Iffe* for his dear est Dame,  
 And for her sake her cattell fed a while,  
 And for her sake a cowheard vile became, 350  
 The seruant of *Admetus* cowheard vile,  
 Whiles that from heauen he suffered exile.  
 Long were to tell each other louely fit,  
 Now like a Lyon, hunting after spoile,  
 Now like a Stag, now like a faulcon flit :  
 All which in that faire arras was most liuely writ.

Next vnto him was *Neptune* pictured,  
 In his diuine refemblance wondrous lyke :  
 His face was rugged, and his hoarie hed  
 Dropped with brackish deaw ; his three-forkt Pyke  
 He stearnly shooke, and therewith fierce did stryke  
 The raging billowes, that on euery syde 362  
 They trembling stood, and made a long broad dyke,  
 That his swift charet might haue passage wyde,  
 Which foure great *Hippodames* did draw in temewife  
 tyde.

His fea-horſes did seeme to sport amayne,  
 And from their noſethrilles blow the brynne ſtreame,

l. 343, 'fire': l. 347, 'Shepherds': l. 353, 'fitt': l. 355, 'Hag' in '90 and '96—Jortin suggests 'Stag'—accepted, seeing that 'Hag' is impossible, albeit 'Stag' is hardly classical: ll. 360, 366, no hyphens.

That made the sparckling waues to smoke agayne,  
 And flame with gold, but the white fomy creame,  
 Did shine with filuer, and shoot forth his beame. 370  
 The God himselfe did pensiue seeme and fad,  
 And hong adowne his head, as he did dreame :  
 For priuy loue his brest empierced had,  
 Ne ought but deare *Bisaltis* ay could make him glad. /

He loued eke *Iphimedia* deare,  
 And *Aeolus* faire daughter *Arne* hight.  
 For whom he turnd him selfe into a Steare,  
 And fed on fodder, to beguile her fight.  
 Also to win *Deucalions* daughter bright,  
 He turnd him selfe into a Dolphin fayre ; 380  
 And like a winged horfe he tooke his flight,  
 To snaky-locke *Medusa* to repayre,  
 On whom he got faire *Pegasus*, that flitteth in the ayre.

Next *Saturne* was, (but who would euer weene,  
 That fullein *Saturne* euer weend to loue ?  
 Yet loue is fullein, and *Saturnlike* seene,  
 As he did for *Erigone* it proue.)  
 That to a *Centaure* did him selfe transmoue.  
 So prou'd it eke that gracious God of wine,  
 When for to compasse *Philliras* hard loue, 390  
 He turnd himselfe into a fruitfull vine,  
 And into her faire bofome made his grapes decline.

Long were to tell the amorous affayes,  
 And gentle pangues, with which he maked meeke

l. 378, 'fdd': l. 382, 'snaky' is misprinted 'snaly' in '96: l. 387,  
 no ): l. 389, 'gratious.'

The mighty *Mars*, to learne his wanton playes :  
 How oft for *Venus*, and how often eek  
 For many other Nymphes he sore did threek,  
 With womanish teares, and with vnwarlike smarts,  
 Priuily moystening his horrid cheek. 399  
 There was he painted full of burning darts, (parts,  
 And many wide woundes launched through his inner

Ne did he spare (so cruell was the Elfe)  
 His owne deare mother, (ah why should he so ? )  
 Ne did he spare sometime to pricke himselfe,  
 That he might tast the sweet consuming woe,  
 Which / he had wrought to many others moe,  
 But to declare the mournfull Tragedyes,  
 And spoiles, wherewith he all the ground did strow,  
 More eath to number, with how many eyes  
 High heauen beholds sad louers nightly theeueries. 410

Kings Queenes, Lords Ladies, Knights & Damzels gent  
 Were heap'd together with the vulgar fort,  
 And mingled with the raskall rablement,  
 Without respect of perfon or of port,  
 To shew Dan *Cupids* powre and great effort :  
 And round about a border was entrayld,  
 Of broken bowes and arrowes shiuered short,  
 And a long bloody riuer through them rayld,  
 So liuely and so like, that liuing fence it sayld.

And at the vpper end of that faire rowme, 420  
 There was an Altar built of pretious stone,

l. 395, 'mightie': l. 399, 'cheeke': l. 400, 'dartes': l. 401, 'partes': l. 403,  
 second ) inadvertently dropped in '96: l. 405, 'taste': l. 410, 'heuen  
 beholdes': l. 411, 'knights': l. 418, 'bloody.'

Of passing vawle, and of great renowme,  
 On which there stood an Image all alone,  
 Of massy gold, which with his owne light shone ;  
 And wings it had with sundry colours dight,  
 More sundry colours, then the proud *Pauone*  
 Beares in his boasted fan, or *Iris* bright,  
 When her discoloured bow she spreads through heauens  
 hight.

Blindfold he was, and in his cruell fift  
 A mortall bow and arrowes keene did hold,      430  
 With which he shot at randon, when him list,  
 Some headed with fad lead, some with pure gold ;  
 (Ah man beware, how thou those darts behold)  
 A wounded Dragon vnder him did ly,  
 Whose hideous tayle his left foot did enfold,  
 And with a shaft was shot through either eye,  
 That no man forth might draw, ne no man remedye. /

And vnderneath his feet was written thus,  
*Vnto the Vict'or of the Gods this bee :*  
 And all the people in that ample hous      440  
 Did to that image bow their humble knee,  
 And oft committed fowle Idolatree.  
 That wondrous fight faire *Britomart* amazed,  
 Ne seeing could her wonder satisfie,  
 But euermore and more vpon it gazed,  
 The whiles the passing brightnes her fraile fences dazed.

l. 425, '*winges . . . fondry*,' and so l. 426 : l. 428, '*heuen bright*,' and in '96 '*heauen bright*'—Church suggested '*heuens hight*'—accepted : l. 429, '*Blyndfold*' : l. 433, '*dartes*' : l. 435, '*enfold*'—misprinted '*enfold*' in '96 : l. 441, '*bowe*' : l. 443, '*amazd*,' and so '*d*' for '*ed*' in rhyme-words of the stanza.

Tho as she backward cast her busie eye,  
 To search each secret of that goodly sted,  
 Ouer the dore thus written she did spye  
*Be bold*: she oft and oft it ouer-red, 450  
 Yet could not find what sence it figured:  
 But what so were therein or writ or ment,  
 She was no whit thereby discouraged  
 From profecuting of her first intent,  
 But forward with bold steps into the next roome went.

Much fairer, then the former, was that roome,  
 And richlier by many partes arayd:  
 For not with arras made in painefull loome,  
 But with pure gold it all was ouerlayd, (playd,  
 Wrought with wilde Antickes which their follies  
 In the rich metall, as they liuing were: 461  
 A thousand monstrous formes therein were made,  
 Such as false loue doth oft vpon him weare:  
 For loue in thousand monstrous formes doth oft appeare.

And all about, the glistring walles were hong  
 With warlike spoiles, and with victorious prayes,  
 Of mighty Conquerours and Captaines strong,  
 Which where whilome captiued in their dayes  
 To / cruell loue, and wrought their owne decayes:  
 Their swards & speares were broke, & hauberques rent;  
 And their proud girlonds of tryumphant bayes, 471  
 Troden in dust with fury insolent,  
 To shew the victors might and mercileffe intent.

l. 448, 'secrete': l. 450, 'Bee,' and no, after 'ouer red': l. 452, , after  
 'therein': l. 456, 'fayrer': l. 463, : substituted for, of '90 and ? of '96:  
 l. 467, 'mightie': l. 470, no punctuation after 'rent': l. 471, , after  
 , bayes'—accepted.

The warlike Mayde beholding earnestly  
 The goodly ordinance of this rich place,  
 Did greatly wonder, ne could satisfe  
 Her greedy eyes with gazing a long space :  
 But more she meruaild that no footings trace,  
 Nor wight appear'd, but wastefull emptinesse,  
 And solemne silence ouer all that place : 480  
 Straunge thing it seem'd, that none was to possesse  
 So rich purueyance, ne them keepe with carefulnesse.

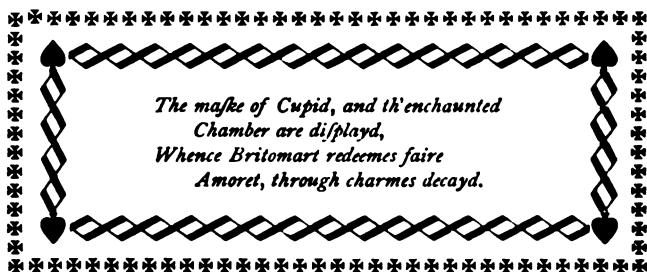
And as she lookt about, she did behold,  
 How ouer that same dore was likewise writ,  
*Be bold, be bold*, and euery where *Be bold*,  
 That much she muz'd, yet could not construe it  
 By any ridling skill, or commune wit.  
 At last she spyde at that roomes vpper end,  
 Another yron dore, on which was writ,  
*Be not too bold* ; whereto though she did bend 490  
 Her earnest mind, yet wist not what it might intend.

Thus she there waited vntill euentide,  
 Yet liuing creature none she saw appeare :  
 And now sad shadowes gan the world to hyde,  
 From mortall vew, and wrap in darkenesse dreare ;  
 Yet nould she d'off her weary armes, for feare  
 Of secreet daunger, ne let sleepe oppresse  
 Her heauy eyes with natures burdein deare,  
 But drew her selfe aside in fickerneffe,  
 And her welpointed weapons did about her dresse. / 500

l. 474, '*Mayd*': l. 475, '*ordinaunce* . . . *Place*': l. 476, , after  
 '*wonder*'—accepted: *ib.*, '*satisfy*': l. 482, '*purueyance*': l. 485, '*bolde*'  
 (*bis*): l. 491, '*minde*': l. 492, '*wayted*': l. 495, '*darkenes*.'



## Cant. XII.



**T**Ho when as cheareleffe Night ycouered had  
 Faire heauen with an vniuerfall cloud,  
 That euery wight difmayd with darknesse fad,  
 In filence and in sleepe themfelues did shroud,  
 She heard a shrilling Trompet found aloud, 10  
 Signe of nigh battell, or got victory;  
 Nought therewith daunted was her courage proud,  
 But rather stird to cruell enmity,  
 Expecting euer, when some foe she might descry.

With that, an hideous storme of winde arose,  
 With dreadfull thunder and lightning atwixt,  
 And an earth-quake, as if it streight would lose  
 The worlds foundations from his centre fixt;  
 A direfull stench of smoke and sulphure mixt  
 Ensawd, whose noyance fild the fearefull sted, 20  
 From the fourth houre of night vntill the fixt;

l. 2, 'enchanted': l. 7, 'Fayre . . . cloud,' and so 'w' for 'u' in stanza's  
 rhyme-words: l. 8, 'darkenes': l. 11, 'battaill': l. 17, 'earthquake':  
 l. 20, 'noyauce': l. 21, 'houre.'

Yet the bold *Britoness* was nought ydred,  
Though much emmou'd, but stedfast still perseuered.

All suddenly a stormy whirlwind blew  
Throughout the house, that clapped euery dore,  
With which that yron wicket open flew,  
As it with mightie leuers had bene tore :  
And / forth issewd, as on the ready flore  
Of some Theatre, a graue personage,  
That in his hand a branch of laurell bore, 30  
With comely haueour and count'nance sage,  
Yclad in costly garments, fit for tragicke Stage.

Proceeding to the midst, he still did stand,  
As if in mind he somewhat had to say,  
And to the vulgar beckning with his hand,  
In signe of silence, as to heare a play,  
By liuely actions he gan bewray  
Some argument of matter passioned ;  
Which doen, he backe retyred soft away,  
And passing by, his name discouered, 40  
*Ease*, on his robe in golden letters cyphered.

The noble Mayd, still standing, all this vewd,  
And merueild at his strange intendment ;  
With that a ioyous fellowship issewd  
Of Minstrals, making goodly meriment,  
With wanton Bardes, and Rymers impudent,  
All which together fung full chearefully  
A lay of loues delight, with sweet consent :

l. 24, '*suddeinly*': l. 27, '*mighty*': l. 28, '*yssewd* . . . *readie*': l. 30, '*braunch*': l. 33, '*sil*': l. 34, '*minde*': l. 35, '*vulgar*': l. 42, , added after '*standing*': l. 43, '*straunge*': l. 45, '*Minstrales*': l. 47, '*song*': l. 48, '*concent*.'

After whom marcht a iolly company,  
In manner of a maske, enranged orderly. 50

The whiles a most delitious harmony,  
In full straunge notes was sweetly heard to found,  
That the rare sweetnesse of the melody  
The feeble senses wholly did confound,  
And the fraile soule in deepe delight nigh dround :  
And when it ceaft, shrill trumpets loud did bray,  
That their report did farre away rebound,  
And when they ceaft, it gan againe to play,  
The whiles the maskers marched forth in trim aray. /

The first was *Fancy*, like a louely boy, 60  
Of rare aspect, and beautie without peare ;  
Matchable either to that ympe of *Troy*,  
Whom *Ioue* did loue, and chose his cup to beare,  
Or that same daintie lad, which was so deare  
To great *Alcides*, that when as he dyde,  
He wailed womanlike with many a teare,  
And euery wood, and euery valley wyde  
He fild with *Hylas* name; the Nymphes eke *Hylas* cryde.

His garment neither was of filke nor fay,  
But painted plumes, in goodly order dight, 70  
Like as the sunburnt *Indians* do aray  
Their tawney bodies, in their proudest plight :  
As those same plumes, so seemd he vaine and light,  
That by his gate might easily appeare ;  
For still he far'd as dauncing in delight,

l. 54, 'sences wholly': l. 55, 'frayle . . . dround': l. 56, 'loud': l. 57, 'far': l. 60, 'Boy': l. 61, , for ;: l. 67, 'word,' and not noted in 'Faults escaped': l. 69, 'nether': l. 70, 'paynted.'

And in his hand a windy fan did beare,  
That in the idle aire he mou'd still here and there.

And him beside marcht amorous *Desyre*,  
Who feemd of riper yeares, then th'other Swaine,  
Yet was that other fwayne this elders fyre, 80  
And gaue him being, commune to them twaine :  
His garment was disguised very vaine,  
And his embrodered Bonet fat awry ;  
Twixt both his hands few sparkes he close did straine,  
Which still he blew, and kindled busily,  
That soone they life conceiu'd, & forth in flames did fly.

Next after him went *Doubt*, who was yclad  
In a discolour'd cote, of straunge disguyfe,  
That at his backe a brode Capuccio had,  
And sleeues dependant *Albanese*-wyfe : 90  
He / lookt askew with his mistrustfull eyes,  
And nicely trode, as thornes lay in his way,  
Or that the flore to shrinke he did auyfe,  
And on a broken reed he still did stay  
His feeble steps, which shrunke, when hard theron  
he lay.

With him went *Daunger*, cloth' in ragged weed,  
Made of Beares skin, that him more dreadfull made,  
Yet his owne face was dreadfull, ne did need  
Straunge horror, to deforme his grievly shade ;

l. 77, 'yde ayre' : l. 79, 'ryper' : *ib.*, 'Swayne,' and so 'y' for 's' in stanza's rhyme-words : l. 80, 'other' in 1609—accepted for 'others' of '90 and '96 : l. 82, 'disguyfed' : l. 84, 'sparkes' : l. 86, 'and' : l. 90, 'dependaunt' : l. 92, 'nicely' : l. 94, , after 'stay' : l. 95, 'shrunck' : l. 99, , for ;.

A net in th'one hand, and a rustie blade                   100  
 In th'other was, this Mischiefe, that Mishap ;  
 With th'one his foes he threatned to inuade,  
 With th'other he his friends ment to enwrap :  
 For whom he could not kill, he practizd to entrap.

Next him was *Fearc*, all arm'd from top to toe,  
 Yet thought himselfe not safe enough thereby,  
 But feard each shadow mouing to and fro,  
 And his owne armes when glittering he did spy,  
 Or clashing heard, he fast away did fly,  
 As ashes pale of hew, and wingyheeld ;                   110  
 And euermore on daunger fixt his eye,  
 Gainst whom he alwaies bent a brasen shield,  
 Which his right hand vnarmed fearefully did wield.

With him went *Hope* in rancke, a handsome Mayd,  
 Of chearefull looke and louely to behold ;  
 In filken samite she was light arayd,  
 And her faire lockes were wouen vp in gold ;  
 She alway smyld, and in her hand did hold  
 An holy water Sprinkle, dipt in deowe,  
 With which she sprinckled fauours manifold,                   120  
 On whom she list, and did great liking sheowe,  
 Great liking vnto many, but true loue to fewe. /

And after them *Dissemblance* and *Suspect*  
 Marcht in one rancke, yet an vnequall paire :  
 For she was gentle, and of milde aspect,  
 Courteous to all, and seeming debonaire,

l. 100, 'rusty' : l. 101, 'mishap' : l. 107, 'too or froe' : l. 110, 'winged  
 heeld' : l. 112, 'alwayes' : l. 117, 'sayre' : l. 123, 'Dissemblaunce,' and  
 so l. 134.

Goodly adorned, and exceeding faire :  
 Yet was that all but painted, and purloynd, (haire :  
 And her bright browes were deckt with borrowed  
 Her deedes were forged, and her words false coynd, 130  
 And alwaies in her hand two clewes of filke she twynd.

But he was foule, ill fauoured, and grim,  
 Vnder his eyebrowes looking still askaunce ;  
 And euer as *Dissemblance* laught on him,  
 He lowrd on her with daungerous eyeglaunce ;  
 Shewing his nature in his countenance ;  
 His rolling eyes did neuer rest in place,  
 But walkt each where, for feare of hid mischaunce,  
 Holding a lattice still before his face,  
 Through which he still did peepe, as forward he did pace.

Next him went *Griefe*, and *Fury* matcht yfere ; 141  
*Griefe* all in sable forrowfully clad,  
 Downe hanging his dull head, with heauy chere,  
 Yet inly being more, then seeming sad :  
 A paire of Pincers in his hand he had,  
 With which he pinched people to the hart,  
 That from thenceforth a wretched life they lad,  
 In wilfull languor and consuming smart,  
 Dying each day with inward wounds of dolours dart.

But *Fury* was full ill appareiled 150  
 In rags, that naked nigh she did appeare,  
 With ghastly lookes and dreadfull drerihed ;  
 For from her backe her garments she did teare,

l. 128, 'paynted . . . pourloynd' : l. 130, 'deeds' : l. 132, 'foule' :  
 l. 133, 'eyebrowes' : l. 136, 'countenance' : l. 137, 'eis' : l. 138, 'walkte' :  
 l. 139, 'lattis' : l. 140, 'stil . . . peep' : l. 147, 'ladd' : l. 152, 'looks.'

And / from her head oft rent her snarled heare :  
 In her right hand a firebrand she did tosse  
 About her head, still roming here and there ;  
 As a dismayed Deare in chace embost,  
 Forgetfull of his safaty, hath his right way lost.

After them went *Displeasure* and *Pleasance*,  
 He looking lompish and full fullein sad, 160  
 And hanging downe his heauy countenance ;  
 She chearefull fresh and full of ioyance glad,  
 As if no forrow she ne felt ne drad ;  
 That euill matched paire they seemd to bee :  
 An angry Waspe th'one in a viall had  
 Th'other in hers an hony-lady Bee ;  
 Thus marched these fixe couples forth in faire degree.

After all these there marcht a most faire Dame,  
 Led of two gryfie villeins, th'one *Despight*,  
 The other cleped *Cruelty* by name : 170  
 She dolefull Lady, like a dreary Spright,  
 Cald by strong charmes out of eternall night,  
 Had deathes owne image figurd in her face,  
 Full of sad signes, fearefull to liuing fight ;

l. 155, '*did tosse*'—*sic* in '90 and '96—another example of Spenser's neglects, which surely no editor has a right to alter. Church suggested omission of '*did*' and '*toft*' for '*toffe*': '*In her right hand a fierbrand she toft*.' See our Life in Vol. I. on this and many others as bearing on the Poet's workmanship and literary art : l. 159, '*Pleasaunce*': l. 161, '*countenance*': l. 162, '*chearefull . . . ioyance*': l. 163, '*dread*': l. 166, '*hony-lady*'—*sic* '90 and '96. Dr. Morris reads even in his text '*hony-laden*'; but '*hony-lady*' must be = Queen Bee. At any rate no such tampering with an Author's text is permissible when that text yields a distinct or possible sense. See Glossary, *s.v.* : l. 167, '*fix*': *ib.*, no punctuation after '*degree*': l. 173, '*Deathes*': l. 174, '*fearfull*.'

Yet in that horror shewd a seemely grace,  
And with her feeble feet did moue a comely pace.

Her breſt all naked, as net iuory,  
Without adorne of gold or ſiluer bright,  
Wherewith the Craſtesman wons it beautify,  
Of her dew honour was deſpoyled quight, 180  
And a wide wound therein (O ruefull ſight)  
Entrenched deepe with knife accurſed keene,  
Yet freſhly bleeding forth her fainting ſpright,  
(The worke of cruell hand) was to be ſeene,  
That dyde in fanguine red her ſkin all ſnowy cleene. /

At that wide orifice her trembling hart  
Was drawne forth, and in ſiluer baſin layd,  
Quite through tranſfixed with a deadly dart,  
And in her bloud yet ſteeming freſh embayd :  
And thoſe two villeins, which her ſteps vpſtayd, 190  
When her weake feete could ſcarcely her ſuſtaine,  
And fading vitall powers gan to fade,  
Her forward ſtill with torture did conſtraine,  
And euermore encreaſed her conſuming paine.

Next after her, the winged God himſelfe  
Came riding on a Lion rauenous,  
Taught to obay the menage of that Elfe,  
That man and beaſt with powre imperious  
Subdeweth to his kingdome tyrannous :

l. 177, 'nett yuory' : l. 182, 'deep . . . knyfe' : l. 189, 'blood' : l. 192, 'fading'—Church imagined that Spenser meant to write 'failing'—perhaps, and perhaps not : *ib.*, 'poures' : l. 193, 'ſkill,' and not noticed in 'Faults eſcaped' : l. 195, , after 'her'—accepted : *ib.*, 'him ſelfe' : l. 199, misprinted 'knigdome' '96 :



His blindfold eyes he bad a while vnbind, 200  
 That his proud spoyle of that same dolorous  
 Faire Dame he might behold in perfect kind ;  
 Which seene, he much reioyced in his cruell mind.

Of which full proud, himfelfe vp rearing hye,  
 He looked round about with sterne difdaine ;  
 And did suruay his goodly company :  
 And marshalling the euill ordered traine,  
 With that the darts which his right hand did straine,  
 Full dreadfully he shooke that all did quake,  
 And clapt on hie his couloured winges twaine, 210  
 That all his many it affraide did make :  
 Tho blinding him againe, his way he forth did take.

Behinde him was *Reproch*, *Repentance*, *Shame* ;  
*Reproch* the first, *Shame* next, *Repent* behind :  
*Repentance* feeble, sorrowfull, and lame :  
*Reproch* despightfull, carelesse, and vnkind ;  
*Shame* / most ill fauourd, bestiall, and blind :  
*Shame* lowrd, *Repentance* figh'd, *Reproch* did scould ;  
*Reproch* sharpe stings, *Repentance* whips entwind,  
*Shame* burning brond-yrons in her hand did hold :  
 All three to each vnlike, yet all made in one mould. 221

And after them a rude confused rout  
 Of persons flockt, whose names is hard to read :

l. 200, '*eies* . . . *vnbinde*,' and so '*e*' in stanza's rhyme-words : l. 201, '*spoile*' : l. 204, '*ful proud, him selfe*' : l. 205, '*disdayne*,' and so '*y*' for '*i*' in l. 207 : l. 208, '*hand*' dropped in '90 and '96, but placed among '*Faults escaped*' of the former : l. 210, '*hye*' : l. 213, '*Repentaunce*,' and so ll. 215, 218, 219 : l. 214, '*behinde*,' and so '*e*' in stanza's rhyme-words : l. 216, '*despightful*.'

Emongst them was sterne *Strife*, and *Anger* stout,  
 Vnquiet *Care*, and fond *Vnthriftihead*,  
 Lewd *Losse of Time*, and *Sorrow* seeming dead,  
 Inconstant *Chaunge*, and false *Disloyaltie*,  
 Consuming *Riotise*, and guilty *Dread*  
 Of heauenly vengeance, faint *Infirmities*,  
 Vile *Pouertie*, and lastly *Death* with infamie. 230

There were full many moe like maladies,  
 Whose names and natures I note readen well ;  
 So many moe, as there be phantasies  
 In wauering wemens wit, that none can tell,  
 Or paines in loue, or punishments in hell ;  
 And which disguised marcht in masking wise,  
 About the chamber with that Damozell,  
 And then returned, hauing marched thrife,  
 Into the inner roome, from whence they first did rise.

So foone as they were in, the dore streight way 240  
 Fast locked, driuen with that stormy blast,  
 Which first it opened ; and bore all away.  
 Then the braue Maid, which all this while was plaft,  
 In secret shade, and saw both first and last,  
 Issewed forth, and went vnto the dore,  
 To enter in, but found it locked fast :  
 It vaine she thought with rigorous vprore  
 For to efforce, when charmes had closed it afore. /

l. 225, '*Vnthriftihead*': l. 227, '*Disloyalty*': l. 229, '*vengeaunce* . . .  
*Infirmity*': l. 230, '*Pouerty* . . . *infamy*': l. 234, '*witt*': l. 237, '*by*  
*the*': l. 239, '*rowme*': l. 241, '*stormy-blast*': l. 242, '*opened* ; *nothing did*  
*remayne*'—*sic*, and no notice in '*Faults escaped*': *ib.*, . added after '*away*':  
 l. 243, '*al*': l. 246, '*fownd*': l. 247, '*It*' is '*In*' in 1611.

Where force might not auaile, their sleights and art  
 She cast to vse, both fit for hard emprize ; 250  
 For thy, from that same roome not to depart  
 Till morrow next, she did her selfe auize,  
 When that same Maske againe should forth arize.  
 The morrow next appeard with ioyous cheare,  
 Calling men to their daily exercize,  
 Then she, as morrow fresh, her selfe did reare  
 Out of her secret stand, that day for to out weare.

All that day she outwore in wandering,  
 And gazing on that Chambers ornament,  
 Till that againe the second eueing 260  
 Her couered with her fable vestiment,  
 Wherewith the worlds faire beautie she hath blent :  
 Then when the second watch was almost past,  
 That brafen dore flew open, and in went  
 Bold *Britomart*, as she had late forecast,  
 Neither of idle shewes, nor of false charmes aghaft.

So soone as she was entred, round about  
 She cast her eies, to see what was become  
 Of all those persons, which she saw without :  
 But lo, they streight were vanisht all and some, 270  
 Ne liuing wight she saw in all that roome,  
 Saue that same woefull Ladie, both whose hands  
 Were bounden fast, that did her ill become,  
 And her small waft girt round with yron bands,  
 Vnto a brafen pillour, by the which she stands.

l. 249, 'their' is 'there' in 1609 : l. 250, 'fit' : l. 251, 'roume' : *ib.*,  
 added after 'thy' : l. 252, 'shee' : l. 254, 'morrowe' : l. 258, 'wandering'  
 is 'wondering' in 1611 : l. 266, 'Nether . . . ydle shewes' : l. 267, 'round' :  
 l. 268, 'Shee' : l. 272, 'Lady' : l. 274, 'waftle . . . round'.

And her before the vile Enchaunter fate,  
 Figuring straunge characters of his art,  
 With liuing bloud he those characters wrate,  
 Dreadfully dropping from her dying hart,  
 Seeming / transfixed with a cruell dart, 280  
 And all perforce to make her him to loue.  
 Ah who can loue the worker of her smart?  
 A thousand charmes he formerly did proue;  
 Yet thousand charmes could not her stedfast heart re-  
 moue.

Soone as that virgin knight he saw in place,  
 His wicked bookes in haft he ouerthrew,  
 Not caring his long labours to deface,  
 And fiercely ronning to that Lady trew,  
 A murderous knife out of his pocket drew,  
 The which he thought, for villenous despight, 290  
 In her tormented bodie to embrew:  
 But the stout Damzell to him leaping light,  
 His curfed hand withheld, and maistered his might.

From her, to whom his fury first he ment,  
 The wicked weapon rashly he did wrest,  
 And turning to her selfe his fell intent,  
 Vnwares it strooke into her snowie chest,  
 That little drops empurpled her faire brest.  
 Exceeding wroth therewith the virgin grew,  
 Albe the wound were nothing deepe imprest, 300  
 And fiercely forth her mortall blade she drew,  
 To giue him the reward for such vile outrage dew.

l. 278, 'blood': l. 288, 'running': l. 296, 'to the next': l. 298, 'little.'

So mightily she smote him, that to ground  
 He fell halfe dead; next stroke him should haue slaine,  
 Had not the Lady, which by him stood bound,  
 Dernely vnto her called to abstaine,  
 From doing him to dy. For else her paine  
 Should be remedileffe, fith none but hee,  
 Which wrought it, could the same recure againe.  
 Therewith she stayd her hand, loth stayd to bee; 310  
 For life she him enuyde, and long'd reuenge to see. /

And to him said, Thou wicked man, whose meed  
 For so huge mischiefe, and vile villany  
 Is death, or if that ought do death exceed,  
 Be sure, that nought may faue thee from to dy,  
 But if that thou this Dame doe presently  
 Restore vnto her health, and former state;  
 This doe and liue, else die vndoubtedly.  
 He glad of life, that lookt for death but late,  
 Did yield himselfe right willing to prolong his date.

And rising vp, gan streight to ouerlooke, 321  
 Those curfed leaues, his charmes backe to reuerse;  
 Full dreadfull things out of that balefull booke  
 He red, and measur'd many a sad verse,  
 That horror gan the virgins hart to perfe,  
 And her faire lockes vp stared stiffe on end,  
 Hearing him those fame bloudy lines reherse;  
 And all the while he red, she did extend  
 Her sword high ouer him, if ought he did offend.

l. 306, '*Dernly*': *ib.*, '*him*' in both '90 and '96, but '*her*' accepted from 1609: *ib.*, '*called*'—misprinted '*called*' in '96: l. 314, '*doe*': l. 318, '*els dye*': l. 323, '*things*': l. 325, '*horroure*': l. 326, '*locks*': l. 327, '*bloody*.'

Anon she gan perceiue the houle to quake, 330  
 And all the dores to rattle round about ;  
 Yet all that did not her dismaied make,  
 Nor slacke her threatfull hand for daungers dout,  
 But still with stedfast eye and courage stout  
 Abode, to weet what end would come of all.  
 At last that mightie chaine, which round about  
 Her tender waste was wound, adowne gan fall,  
 And that great brafen pillour broke in peeces small.

The cruell steele, which thrild her dying hart,  
 Fell softly forth, as of his owne accord, 340  
 And the wyde wound, which lately did dispart  
 Her bleeding brest, and riuen bowels gor'd,  
 Was / clofed vp, as it had not bene bor'd,  
 And euery part to safety full found,  
 As she were neuer hurt, was soone restor'd :  
 Tho when she felt her selfe to be vnbound,  
 And perfect hole, prostrate she fell vnto the ground.

Before faire *Britomart*, she fell prostrate,  
 Saying, Ah noble knight, what worthy meed  
 Can wretched Lady, quit from wofull state, 350  
 Yield you in lieu of this your gracious deed ?  
 Your vertue selfe her owne reward shall breed,  
 Euen immortall praise, and glory wyde,  
 Which I your vassall, by your prowesse freed,  
 Shall through the world make to be notifyde,  
 And goodly well aduance, that goodly well was tryde.

l. 333, 'slack' : l. 334, , after 'stout' : l. 335, , after 'weet,' not 'Abode' :  
 l. 343, 'beene ford' : l. 344, 'fownd,' and so 'w' in stanza's rhyme-words :  
 l. 349, 'meede' : l. 350, 'quitt' : l. 351, 'lieu . . . gracious' : l. 353,  
 'prayse.'

But *Britomart* vprearing her from ground,  
 Said, Gentle Dame, reward enough I weene  
 For many labours more, then I haue found,  
 This, that in safety now I haue you seene, 360  
 And meane of your deliuerance haue beene :  
 Henceforth faire Lady comfort to you take,  
 And put away remembrance of late teene ;  
 Instead thereof know, that your louing Make,  
 Hath no lesse grieve endured for your gentle sake.

She was much cheard to heare him mentiond,  
 Whom of all liuing wights she loued best.  
 Then laid the noble Championesse strong hond  
 Vpon th'enchauter, which had her distrest  
 So fore, and with foule outrages opprest : 370  
 With that great chaine, wherewith not long ygo  
 He bound that pitteous Lady prisoner, now relest,  
 Himselfe she bound, more worthy to be so,  
 And captiue with her led to wretchednesse and wo.

Returning backe, those goodly roomes, which erst  
 She saw so rich and royally arrayd,  
 Now vanisht vtterly, and cleane subuerst  
 She found, and all their glory quite decayd,  
 That sight of such a chaunge her much dismayd.  
 Thence forth descending to that perlous Porch, 380  
 Those dreadfull flames she also found delayd,

l. 357, 'ground': l. 360, 'safetie': l. 362, 'Lad'—sic: l. 363, 'remembrance': l. 364, 'In sted': l. 367, 'wighes': l. 371, 'ygoe': l. 375, 'back . . . rowmes': l. 376, 'He,' but corrected in 'Faults escaped,' and so l. 378: *ib.*, 'arrayd': l. 379, 'him,' but also corrected in 'Faults escaped.'

And quenched quite, like a consumed torch,  
That erst all entrers wont so cruelly to scorch.

More easie issfew now, then entrance late  
She found : for now that fained dreadfull flame,  
Which chokt the porch of that enchaunted gate,  
And passage bard to all, that thither came,  
Was vanisht quite, as it were not the same,  
And gaue her leaue at pleasure forth to passe.  
Th' Enchaunter felse, which all that fraud did frame,  
To have effort the loue of that faire lasse, 391  
Seeing his worke now waisted deepe engrieued was.

But when the victoreffe arriued there,  
Where late she left the penfise *Scudamore*,  
With her owne trusty Squire, both full of feare,  
Neither of them she found where she them lore :  
Thereat her noble hart was stonisht fore ;  
But most faire *Amoret*, whose gentle spright  
Now gan to feede on hope, which she before  
Conceiued had, to see her owne deare knight, 400  
Being thereof beguyld was fild with new affright.

But he fad man, when he had long in drede  
Awayted there for *Britomarts* returne,

ll. 384—410 in 1596 took the place of the stanzas which we add as an appendix to this last canto of Book III. It will be observed that originally Sir Scudamore and Amoret had a happy meeting ; but in '96, when the Poet reprinted Books I.—III. to go along with the new volume of that year, he left out (*ut supra*) the last five stanzas of '90, and replaced them with the three new ones, ll. 384—410. This was meant to connect the third book better with the fourth, and otherwise to improve the story. On this and the other alterations in 1596 edition from 1590, see our Life in Vol. I.



Yet saw her not nor signe of her good speed,  
His expectation to despaire did turne,  
Misdeeming sure that her those flames did burne ;  
And / therefore gan aduize with her old Squire,  
Who her deare nourslings losse no lesse did mourne,  
Thence to depart for further aid t'enquire : 409  
Where let them wend at will, whilest here I doe respire.

STANZAS IN 1590 REPLACED IN 1596 WITH OTHERS.

(See Foot-note on l. 384, p. 35.)

AT laft ſhe came vnto the place, where late  
 She left Sir *Scudamour* in great diſtreſſe,  
 Twixt dolour and deſpight halfe deſperate,  
 Of his loues ſuccour, of his owne redreſſe,  
 And of the hardie *Britomarts* ſucceſſe :  
 There on the cold earth him now thrown ſhe found,  
 In wilful anguiſh, and dead heauineſſe,  
 And to him cald ; whoſe voices knownen found  
 Soone as he heard, himſelf he reared light from ground.

There did he ſee, that moſt on earth him ioyd,      10  
 His deareſt loue, the comfort of his dayes,  
 Whoſe too long abſence him had fore annoyd,  
 And wearied his life with dull delayes :  
 Straight he vpſtarted from the loathed layes,  
 And to her ran with haſty egerneſſe,  
 Like as a Deare, that greedily embayes  
 In the coole foile, after long thirſtineſſe,  
 Which he in chace endured hath, now nigh breathleſſe.

Lightly he clipt her twixt his armes twaine,  
 And ſtreightly did embrace her body bright,      20  
 Her body, late the priſon of ſad paine,  
 Now the ſweet lodge of loue and deare delight : /

l. 4, '*fuccour*,' but corrected in 'Faults eſcaped.'

38 *THE III. BOOKE OF THE FAERIE QUEENE.*

But she faire Lady ouercommen quight  
 Of huge affection, did in pleasure melt,  
 And in sweete rauishment poud out her spright :  
 No word they spake, nor earthly thing they felt,  
 But like two senceles stocks in long embracemēt dwelt.

Had ye them seene, ye would have surely thought,  
 That they had beene that faire *Hermaphrodite*,  
 Which that rich *Roman* of white marble wrought, 30  
 And in his costly Bath caufd to bee site :  
 So seemd those two, as growne together quite,  
 That *Britomart* halfe enuying their b[l]esse,  
 Was much empaffiond in her gentle sprite,  
 And to her selfe oft wisht like happinesse :  
 In vaine she wisht, that fate n'ould let her yet possesse.

Thus doe those louers with sweet counteruayle,  
 Each other of loues bitter fruit despoile.  
 But now my teme begins to faint and fayle,  
 All woxen weary of their iournall toyle : 40  
 Therefore I will their sweatie yokes affoyle,  
 At this fame furrowes end, till a new day :  
 And ye faire swayns, after your long turmoyle,  
 Now ceafe your worke, and at your pleasure play :  
 Now ceafe your worke ; to morrow is an holy day.

l. 35, : substituted for , of the original.

FINIS.



# THE FOVRTH BOOKE OF THE FAERIE QVEENE.

*Containing*  
The Legend of CAMBEL and TELAMOND,  
*OR*  
OF FRIENDSHIP.

**T**He rugged forehead that with graue foresight  
Welds kingdomes caufes, & affaires of state,

1. 1—see general title-page for the two volumes of 1596 in Note, Vol. V., p. 2. Vol. I. contained B. I.—III., Vol. II., B. IV.—VI. As shown by the Various Readings, B. I.—III. of 1590 were carefully revised by the Author for the new edition in 1596. Of B. IV.—VI. there was no second edition during the Author's lifetime, and thus it remains the only authorised text. Consequently, while the Various Readings of B. I.—III. inevitably claimed record as having been the Poet's own, there is no such claim for after-editions, as of 1609, 1611, etc. But I have thought it expedient to place underneath such variations in spelling, etc., of 1609, when the "Faerie Qveene" belonged to Mathew Lownes ("At London / Printed by H. L. for Mathew Lownes") as are helpful or interesting. But our text is a faithful reproduction of that of 1596, save a very few corrections, as noted in the places: l. 5, 'Telamond'—so in '96 and 1609. In 1611 altered to 'Triamond,' and since accepted. On this and kindred points see the Life in Vol. I. See C. II. l. 283, *et freq.*: l. 9, 'State' 1609. Be it understood that unless otherwise stated my Variations are fetched from the folio of 1609.

My looser rimes (I wote) doth sharply wite, 10  
 For praising loue, as I haue done of late,  
 And magnifying louers deare debate ;  
 By which fraile youth is oft to follie led,  
 Through false allurements of that pleasing baite,  
 That better were in vertues discipled,  
 Then with vaine poemes weeds to haue their fancies fed.

Such ones ill iudge of loue, that cannot loue,  
 Ne in their frozen hearts feele kindly flame :  
 For thy, they ought not thing vnknowne reprove,  
 Ne naturall affection faultlesse blame, 20  
 For fault of few that haue abused the same.  
 For it of honor and all vertue is  
 The roote, and brings forth glorious flowres of fame,  
 That crowne true louers with immortall blis,  
 The meed of them that loue, and do not liue amisse.

Which who so list looke backe to former ages,  
 And call to count the things that then were donne,  
 Shall find, that all the workes of those wise fages,  
 And braue exploits which great Heroes wonne,  
 In loue were either ended or begunne : 30  
 Witnesse the father of Philosophie,  
 Which to his *Critias*, shaded oft from funne,  
 Of loue full manie lessons did apply,  
 The which these Stoicke censours cannot well deny.

To such therefore I do not sing at all,  
 But to that sacred Saint my soueraigne Queene,

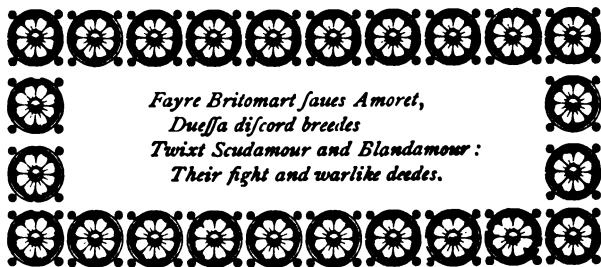
l. 13, , after 'which' : l. 19, 'For-*thy*,' and so usually—, added.

In whose chafte breaft all bountie naturall,  
 And treasures of true loue enlocked beene,  
 Boue all her sexe that euer yet was seene ;  
 To her I fing of loue, that loueth best 40  
 And best is lou'd of all aliue I weene :  
 To her this fong most fitly is adrest,  
 The Queene of loue, & Prince of peace frō heauen blest.

Which that she may the better deigne to heare,  
 Do thou dred infant, *Venus* dearling doue,  
 From her high spirit chafe imperious feare,  
 And vse of awfull Maiestie remoue :  
 In sted thereof with drops of melting loue,  
 Deawd with ambrofiall kisses, by thee gotten 50  
 From thy sweete smyling mother from aboue,  
 Sprinkle her heart, and haughtie courage soften,  
 That she may hearke to loue, and reade this lesson often.

L. 52, misprinted '*soften*'.

## Cant. / I.



O F louers sad calamities of old,  
 Full many piteous stories doe remaine,  
 But none more piteous euer was ytold,  
 Then that of *Amorets* hart-binding chaine,  
 And this of *Florimels* vnworthie paine : 10  
 The deare compassion of whose bitter fit  
 My softened heart so forely doth constraîne,  
 That I with teares full oft doe pittie it,  
 And oftentimes doe wish it neuer had bene writ.

For from the time that *Scudamour* her bought  
 In perilous fight, she neuer ioyed day,  
 A perilous fight when he with force her brought  
 From twentie Knights, that did him all assay :  
 Yet fairely well he did them all difmay :  
 And with great glorie both the shield of loue, 20  
 And eke the Ladie selfe he brought away,

l. 1,—pp. 3-4 are numbered '5-6,' and so onward in '96.

Whom hauing wedded as did him behoue,  
A new vnknownen mischiefe did from him remoue.

For that fame vile Enchauntour *Busyran*,  
The very selfe fame day that she was wedded,  
Amidst the bridale feast, whilest euery man  
Surcharg'd with wine, were heedlesse and ill hedded./  
All bent to mirth before the bride was bedded,  
Brought in that mask of loue which late was shoven:  
And there the Ladie ill of friends bestedded, 30  
By way of sport, as oft in maskes is knownen,  
Conueyed quite away to liuing wight vnknownen.

Seuen moneths he fo her kept in bitter smart,  
Because his sinfull lust she would not serue,  
Vntill such time as noble *Britomart*  
Released her, that else was like to sterue,  
Through cruell knife that her deare heart did kerue.  
And now she is with her vpon the way,  
Marching in louely wife, that could deferue  
No spot of blame, though spite did oft assay 40  
To blot her with dishonor of so faire a pray.

Yet should it be a pleasant tale, to tell  
The diuerse vfrage and demeanure daint,  
That each to other made, as oft befell.  
For *Amoret* right fearefull was and faint,  
Left she with blame her honor should attain,  
That euerie word did tremble as she spake,  
And euerie looke was coy, and wondrous quaint,  
And euerie limbe that touched her did quake:  
Yet could she not but curteous couētenance to her make.



For well she wift, as true it was indeed, 51  
 That her liues Lord and patrone of her health  
 Right well deserued as his duefull meed,  
 Her loue, her seruice, and her vtmost wealth.  
 All is his iustly, that all freely death :  
 Nathlesse her honor dearer then her life,  
 She fought to faue, as thing referu'd from stealth ;  
 Die had she leuer with Enchanters knife,  
 Then to be false in loue, profest a virgine wife.

Thereto / her feare was made so much the greater  
 Through fine abusion of that Briton mayd :  
 Who for to hide her fained sex the better,  
 And maske her wounded mind, both did and sayd  
 Full many things so doubtfull to be wayd,  
 That well she wift not what by them to gesse,  
 For other whiles to her she purpos made  
 Of loue, and otherwhiles of lustfulnesse,  
 That much she feard his mind would grow to some ex-  
 cesse.

His will she feard ; for him she surely thought  
 To be a man, such as indeed he seemed, 70  
 And much the more, by that he lately wrought,  
 When her from deadly thraldome he redeemed,  
 For which no seruice she too much esteemed,  
 Yet dread of shame, and doubt of fowle dishonor  
 Made her not yeeld so much, as due she deemed.  
 Yet *Britomart* attended duly on her,  
 As well became a knight, and did to her all honor.

It so befell one euening, that they came  
 Vnto a Castell, lodged there to bee,

Where many a knight, and many a louely Dame 80  
 Was then assembled, deeds of armes to see :  
 Amongst all which was none more faire then shee,  
 That many of them mou'd to eye her fore.  
 The custome of that place was such, that hee  
 Which had no loue nor lemman there in store,  
 Should either winne him one, or lye without the dore.

Amongst the rest there was a iolly knight,  
 Who being asked for his loue, auow'd  
 That fairest *Amoret* was his by right,  
 And offred that to iustifie alowd. /  
 The warlike virgine seeing his so prowde 90  
 And boastfull chalenge, wexed inlie wroth,  
 But for the present did her anger shrowd ;  
 And sayd, her loue to lose she was full loth,  
 But either he should neither of them haue, or both.

So forth they went, and both together giusted ;  
 But that same younker soone was ouer throwne,  
 And made repent, that he had rashly lusted  
 For thing vnlawfull, that was not his owne :  
 Yet since he seemed valiant, though vnknowne, 100  
 She that no lesse was courteous then stout,  
 Cast how to salue, that both the custome showne  
 Were kept, and yet that Knight not locked out ;  
 That seem'd full hard t'accord two things so far in dout.

The Seneschall was cal'd to deeme the right,  
 Whom she requir'd, that first sayre *Amoret*  
 Might be to her allow'd, as to a Knight,  
 That did her win and free from chalenge fet :

l. 101, 1609 badly misprints '*courteous and stout*': l. 103, ; for , accepted.

Which straight to her was yeelded without let. (quitted,  
 Then since that strange Knights loue from him was  
 She claim'd that to her felfe, as Ladies det, 111  
 He as a Knight might iustly be admitted ;  
 So none should be out shut, sith all of loues were fitted.

With that her gliftring helmet she vnaced ;  
 Which doft, her golden lockes, that were vp bound  
 Still in a knot, vnto her heeles downe traced,  
 And like a filken veile in compasse round  
 About her backe and all her bodie wound ;  
 Like as the shining skie in summers night,  
 What time the dayes with scorching heat abound,  
 Is creasted all with lines of fire light,  
 That it prodigious seemes in common peoples fight.

Such / when those Knights and Ladies all about  
 Beheld her, all were with amazement smit,  
 And euery one gan grow in secret dout  
 Of this and that, according to each wit :  
 Some thought that some enchantment faygned it ;  
 Some, that *Bellona* in that warlike wife  
 To them appear'd, with shield and armour fit ; 130  
 Some, that it was a maske of strange disguise ;  
 So diuerfely each one did fundrie doubts deuife.

But that young Knight, which through her gentle deed  
 Was to that goodly fellowship restor'd,  
 Ten thousand thanks did yeeld her for her meed,  
 And doubly ouercommen, her ador'd :  
 So did they all their former strife accord ;  
 And eke fayre *Amoret* now freed from feare,  
 More franke affection did to her afford,

And to her bed, which she was wont forbear,  
Now freely drew, and found right safe assurance there.

Where all that night they of their loues did treat, 141  
And hard aduentures twixt themselues alone,  
That each the other gan with passion great,  
And grieffull pittie priuately bemone.  
The morow next so soone as *Titan* shone,  
They both vprose, and to their waies them dight :  
Long wandred they, yet neuer met with none,  
That to their willes could them direct aright,  
Or to them tydings tell, that mote their harts delight.

Lo thus they rode, till at the last they spide 150  
Two armed Knights, that toward them did pace,  
And ech of them had ryding by his side  
A Ladie, seeming in so farre a space, /  
But Ladies none they were, albee in face  
And outward shew faire semblance they did beare ;  
For vnder maske of beautie and good grace,  
Vile treason and fowle falshood hidden were,  
That mote to none but to the warie wife appeare.

The one of them the false *Dueffa* hight,  
That now had chang'd her former wonted hew : 160  
For she could d'on so manie shapes in fight,  
As euer could Cameleon colours new ;  
So could she forge all colours, faue the trew.  
The other no whit better was then shee,  
But that such as she was, she plaine did shew ;  
Yet otherwise much worfe, if worfe might bee,  
And dayly more offensiue vnto each degree.

l. 144, 'griefe-full' : l. 147, 'one.'

Her name was *Ate*, mother of debate,  
 . And all diffention, which doth dayly grow  
 Amongst fraile men, that many a publike state 170  
 And many a priuate oft doth ouerthrow.  
 Her false *Dueffa* who full well did know,  
 To be most fit to trouble noble knights,  
 Which hunt for honor, raised from below,  
 Out of the dwellings of the damned sprights,  
 Where she in darknes wastes her cursed daies & nights.

Hard by the gates of hell her dwelling is,  
 There whereas all the plagues and harmes abound,  
 . Which punish wicked men, that walke amisse :  
 It is a darksome delue farre vnder ground, 180  
 - With thornes and barren brakes enuironed round,  
 That none the same may easily out win ;  
 Yet many waies to enter may be found,  
 But none to issue forth when one is in :  
 For discord harder is to end then to begin.

And / all within the riuen walls were hung  
 With ragged monuments of times forepast,  
 All which the sad effects of discord sung :  
 There were rent robes, and broken scepters plaft,  
 Altars defyl'd, and holy things defast, 190  
 Diffhiuered speares, and shields ytorne in twaine,  
 Great cities ranfackt, and strong castles raft,  
 Nations captiued, and huge armies flaine :  
 Of all which ruines there some relicks did remaine.

There was the signe of antique Babylon,  
 Of fatall Thebes, of Rome that raigned long,

Of facred Salem and sad Ilion  
 For memorie of which on high there hong  
 The golden Apple, cause of all their wrong,  
 For which the three faire Goddeffes did striue : 200  
 There also was the name of *Nimrod* strong,  
 Of *Alexander*, and his Princes fwe,  
 Which shar'd to them the spoiles that he had got aliue.

And there the relicks of the drunken fray,  
 The which amongst the *Lapithees* befell,  
 And of the bloodie feaft, which sent away  
 So many *Centaures* drunken foules to hell,  
 That vnder great *Alcides* furie fell :  
 And of the dreadfull discord, which did driue  
 The noble *Argonauts* to outrage sell : 210  
 That each of life fought others to depriue,  
 All mindleffe of the Golden fleece, which made them  
 (striue.  
 And eke of priuate perfons many moe,  
 That were too long a worke to count them all ;  
 Some of sworne friends, that did their faith forgoe ;  
 Some of borne brethren, prov'd vnnaturall ;/  
 Some of deare louers, foes perpetuall :  
 Witneffe their broken bandes there to be seene,  
 Their girlonds rent, their bowres despoyled all ;  
 The monuments whereof there byding beene, 220  
 As plaine as at the first, when they were fresh and greene.

Such was her house within ; but all without,  
 The barren ground was full of wicked weedes,  
 Which she her selfe had sowne all about,  
 Now growen great, at first of little seedes,

l. 199, 'cause . . . wrong' in ( ).

The feedes of euill wordes, and factious deedes ;  
 Which when to ripenesse due they growen arre,  
 Bring foorth an infinite increafe, that breedes  
 Tumultuous trouble and contentious iarre,  
 The which most often end in bloudshed and in warre. 230

And thofe fame curfed feedes doe alfo ferue  
 To her for bread, and yeeld her liuing food :  
 For life it is to her, when others sterue  
 Through mifchieuous debate, and deadly feood,  
 That ſhe may fucke their life, and drinke their blood,  
 With which ſhe from her childhood had bene fed.  
 For ſhe at firſt was borne of helliſh brood,  
 And by infernall furies nourifhed,  
 That by her monſtrous ſhape might eaſily be red.

Her face moſt fowle and filthy was to ſee, 240  
 With ſquinted eyes contrarie wayes intended,  
 And loathly mouth, vnmeete a mouth to bee,  
 That nought but gall and venim comprehended,  
 And wicked wordes that God and man offended :  
 Her lying tongue was in two parts diuided,  
 And both the parts did ſpeake, and both contended ;  
 And as her tongue, ſo was her hart diſcided,  
 That neuer thought one thing, but doubly ſtil was guided.

Als / as ſhe double ſpake, ſo heard ſhe double, 250  
 With matchleſſe eares deformed and diſtort,  
 Fild with falſe rumors and ſeditious trouble,  
 Bred in aſſemblies of the vulgar fort,  
 That ſtill are led with euery light report.  
 And as her eares ſo eke her feet were odde,  
 And much vnlike, th'one long, the other ſhort,

And both misplaſt ; that when th'one forward yode,  
The other backe retired, and contrarie trode.

Likewiſe vnequall were her handes twaine,  
That one did reach, the other puſht away,  
That one did make, the other mard againe, 260  
And fought to bring all things vnto decay ;  
Whereby great riches gathered manie a day,  
She in ſhort ſpace did often bring to nought,  
And their poſſeſſours often did diſmay.  
For all her ſtudie was and all her thought,  
How ſhe might ouerthrow the things that Concord  
wrought.

So much her malice did her might ſurpas,  
That euen th'Almightie ſelfe ſhe did maligne,  
Becaufe to man ſo mercifull he was,  
And vnto all his creatures ſo benigne, 270  
Sith ſhe her ſelfe was of his grace indigne :  
For all this worlds faire workmanſhip ſhe tride,  
Vnto his laſt confuſion to bring,  
And that great golden chaine quite to diuide,  
With which it bleſſed Concord hath together tide.

Such was that hag, which with *Dueſſa* roade,  
And ſeruing her in her malitious uſe,  
To hurt good knights, was as it were her baude,  
To ſell her borrowed beautie to abuſe. /  
For though like withered tree, that wanteth iuyce, 280  
She old and crooked were, yet now of late,  
As freſh and fragrant as the floure deluce  
She was become, by chaunge of her eſtate,  
And made full goodly ioyance to her new found mate.



Her mate he was a iollie youthfull knight,  
 That bore great fway in armes and chiuallrie,  
 And was indeed a man of mickle might :  
 His name was *Blandamour*, that did descrie  
 His fickle mind full of inconstancie.  
 And now himselfe he fitted had right well, 290  
 With two companions of like qualitie,  
 Faithlesse *Dueffa*, and false *Paridell*,  
 That whether were more false, full hard it is to tell.

Now when this gallant with his goodly crew,  
 From farre espide the famous *Britomart*,  
 Like knight aduenturous in outward vew,  
 With his faire paragon, his conquests part,  
 Approching nigh, eftsoones his wanton hart  
 Was tickled with delight, and iesting sayd ;  
 Lo there Sir *Paridel*, for your defart. 300  
 Good lucke presents you with yond louely mayd,  
 For pitie that ye want a fellow for your ayd.

By that the louely paire drew nigh to hond :  
 Whom when as *Paridel* more plaine beheld,  
 Albee in heart he like affection fond,  
 Yet mindfull how he late by one was feld,  
 That did those armes and that fame scutchion weld,  
 He had small lust to buy his loue so deare,  
 But answerd, Sir him wife I neuer held,  
 That hauing once escaped perill neare, 310  
 Would afterwards afresh the sleeping euill reare.

This / knight too late his manhood and his might,  
 I did assay, that me right dearly cost,

1. 297, 'his conquests part' in ( ).

Ne list I for reuenge prouoke new fight,  
 Ne for light Ladies loue, that soone is lost.  
 The hot-spurre youth so scorning to be croft,  
 Take then to you this Dame of mine (quoth hee)  
 And I without your perill or your cost,  
 Will challenge yond same other for my fee :  
 So forth he fiercely prickt, that one him scarce could  
 see.

The warlike Britoness her soone addrest, 321  
 And with such vncouth welcome did receaue  
 Her fayned Paramour, her forced gueft,  
 That being forst his faddle soone to leaue,  
 Him selfe he did of his new loue deceaue :  
 And made him selfe th'enfample of his follie.  
 Which done, she passed forth not taking leaue,  
 And left him now as fad, as whilome iollie,  
 Well warned to beware with whom he dar'd to dallie.

Which when his other companie beheld, 330  
 They to his succour ran with readie ayd :  
 And finding him vnable once to weld,  
 They reared him on horsebacke, and vpstayed,  
 Till on his way they had him forth conuayd :  
 And all the way with wondrous grieve of mynd,  
 And shame, he shewd him selfe to be dismayd,  
 More for the loue which he had left behynd,  
 Then that which he had to Sir *Paridel* refynd.

Nathlesse he forth did march well as he might,  
 And made good semblance to his companie, 340

Diffembling his diseafe and euill plight ;  
 Till that ere long they chaunced to espie  
 Two other knights, that towards them did ply /  
 With speedie course, as bent to charge them new.  
 Whom when as *Blandamour* approching nie,  
 Perceiu'd to be such as they seemd in vew,  
 He was full wo, and gan his former grieve renew.

For th'one of them he perfectly descride,  
 To be Sir *Scudamour*, by that he bore  
 The God of loue, with wings displayed wide, 350  
 Whom mortally he hated euermore,  
 Both for his worth, that all men did adore,  
 And eke because his loue he wonne by right :  
 Which when he thought, it griued him full fore,  
 That through the brufes of his former fight,  
 He now vnable was to wreake his old despight.

For thy, he thus to *Paridel* bespake,  
 Faire Sir, of friendship let me now you pray,  
 That as I late aduentured for your sake,  
 The hurts whereof me now from battell stay, 360  
 Ye will me now with like good turne repay,  
 And iustifie my cause on yonder knight.  
 Ah Sir (said *Paridel*) do not difmay  
 Your selfe for this, my selfe will for you fight,  
 As ye haue done for me : the left hand rubs the right.

With that he put his spurres vnto his steed,  
 With speare in rest, and toward him did fare,

l. 343, '96 mispunctuates a period after 'ply': l. 352, 'that . . . adore'  
 in ( ): l. 357, , added after 'thy': l. 363, 'I' after 'Sir.'

Like shaft out of a bow preuenting speed.  
But *Scudamour* was shortly well aware  
Of his approch, and gan him selfe prepare 370  
Him to receiue with entertainment meete.  
So furiously they met, that either bare  
The other downe vnder their horses feete,  
That what of them became, themselues did scarcely  
weete.

As / when two billowes in the Irish fowndes,  
Forcibly driuen with contrarie tydes  
Do meete together, each abacke rebowndes  
With roaring rage ; and dashing on all sides,  
That filleth all the sea with fume, diuyles  
The doubtfull current into diuers wayes : 380  
So fell those two in spight of both their prydes,  
But *Scudamour* himselfe did soone vprayfe,  
And mounting light his foe for lying long vpbrayes.

Who rolled on an heape lay still in ffound,  
All carelesse of his taunt and bitter rayle,  
Till that the rest him seeing lie on ground,  
Ran hastily, to weete what did him ayle.  
Where finding that the breath gan him to fayle,  
With busie care they stroue him to awake,  
And doft his helmet, and vndid his mayle : 390  
So much they did, that at the last they brake  
His slomber, yet so mazed, that he nothing spake.

Which when as *Blandamour* beheld, he sayd,  
Falso faitour *Scudamour*, that hast by sight  
And foule aduantage this good Knight difmayd,  
A Knight much better then thy selfe behight,

Well falles it thee that I am not in plight  
 This day, to wreake the dammage by thee donne :  
 Such is thy wont, that still when any Knight  
 Is weakned, then thou doest him ouerronne : 400  
 So hast thou to thy selfe false honour often wonne.

He little answer'd, but in manly heart  
 His mightie indignation did forbear,  
 Which was not yet so secret, but some part  
 Thereof did in his frowning face appeare : /  
 Like as a gloomie cloud, the which doth beare  
 An hideous storme, is by the Northerne blast  
 Quite ouerblowne, yet doth not passe so cleare,  
 But that it all the skie doth ouercast  
 With darknes dred, and threatens all the world to  
 waft.

Ah gentle knight then false *Dueffa* sayd, 411  
 Why do ye striue for Ladies loue so fore,  
 Whose chiefe desire is loue and friendly aid  
 Mongst gentle Knights to nourish euermore ?  
 Ne be ye wroth Sir *Scudamour* therefore,  
 That she your loue list loue another knight,  
 Ne do your selfe dislike a whit the more ;  
 For Loue is free, and led with selfe delight,  
 Ne will enforced be with maisterdome or might.

So false *Dueffa*, but vile *Ate* thus ; 420  
 Both foolish knights, I can but laugh at both,  
 That striue and storme with stirre outrageous,  
 For her that each of you alike doth loth,

And loues another, with whom now she go'th  
 In louely wise, and sleepes, and sports, and playes ;  
 Whilest both you here with many a curfed oth,  
 Swear she is yours, and stirre vp bloudie frayes,  
 To win a willow bough, whilest other weares the  
 bayes.

Vile hag (sayd *Scudamour*) why dost thou lye ?  
 And falsly seekst a vertuous wight to shame ? 430  
 Fond knight (sayd she) the thing that with this eye  
 I saw, why should I doubt to tell the same ?  
 Then tell (quoth *Blandamour*) and feare no blame,  
 Tell what thou saw'st, maulgre who so it heares.  
 I saw (quoth she) a stranger knight, whose name  
 I wote not well, but in his shield he beares .  
 (That well I wote) the heads of many broken speares.

I saw / him haue your *Amoret* at will,  
 I saw him kisse, I saw him her embrace,  
 I saw him sleepe with her all night his fill, 440  
 All manie nights, and manie by in place,  
 That present were to testifie the case.  
 Which when as *Scudamour* did heare, his heart  
 Was thrild with inward griefe, as when in chace  
 The Parthian strikes a stag with shiuering dart,  
 The beast astonisht stands in middest of his smart.

So stood Sir *Scudamour*, when this he heard,  
 Ne word he had to speake for great difmay,  
 But lookt on *Glauce* grim, who woxe afeard  
 Of outrage for the words, which she heard say, 450

L 424, 'go'th'—accepted for 'goth' of '96.



Albee vntrue she wist them by assay.  
 But *Blandamour*, whenas he did espie  
 His chaunge of cheere, that anguish did bewray,  
 He woxe full blithe, as he had got thereby,  
 And gan thereat to triumph without victorie.

Lo recreant (fayd he) the fruitlesse end  
 Of thy vaine boast, and spoile of loue misgotten,  
 Whereby the name of knight-hood thou dost shend,  
 And all true louers with dishonor blotten,  
 All things not rooted well, will soone be rotten. 460  
 Fy fy false knight (then false *Duessa* cryde)  
 Vnworthy life that loue with guile hast gotten,  
 Be thou, where euer thou do go or ryde,  
 Loathed of ladies all, and of all knights defyde.

But *Scudamour* for passing great despight  
 Staid not to answer, scarcely did refraine,  
 But that in all those knights and ladies fight,  
 He for reuenge had guiltlesse *Glauce* slaine :/  
 But being past, he thus began amaine ;  
 False traitour squire, false squire, of falsest knight, 470  
 Why doth mine hand from thine auenge abstaine,  
 Whose Lord hath done my loue this foule despight ?  
 Why do I not it wreake, on thee now in my might ?

Discourteous, disloyall *Britomart*,  
 Vntrue to God, and vnto man vniust,  
 What vengeance due can equall thy defart,  
 That hast with shamefull spot of sinfull lust

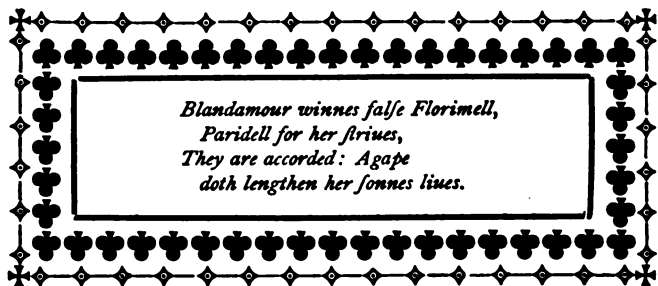
l. 460, . for ;—accepted : l. 465, 'for . . . despight' in ( ).

Defil'd the pledge committed to thy trust ?  
Let vgly shame and endlesse infamy  
Colour thy name with foule reproaches rust. 480  
Yet thou false Squire his fault shalt deare aby,  
And with thy punishment his penance shalt supply.

The aged Dame him seeing so enraged,  
Was dead with feare, nathlesse as neede required,  
His flaming furie sought to haue assuaged  
With sober words, that sufferance desired,  
Till time the tryall of her truth expyred :  
And euermore sought *Britomart* to cleare.  
But he the more with furious rage was fyred,  
And thrife his hand to kill her did vpreare, 490  
And thrife he drew it backe : so did at last forbear.



## Cant. / II.



**F**irebrand of hell, first tynd in Phlegeton,  
 By thousand furies, and from thence out throwen  
 Into this world, to worke confusion,  
 And set it all on fire by force vnknown,  
 Is wicked discord, whose small sparkes once blowne 10  
 None but a God or godlike man can flake ;  
 Such as was *Orpheus*, that when strife was growen  
 Amongst those famous ympes of Greece, did take  
 His siluer Harpe in hand, and shortly friends them make.

Or such as that celestiall Psalmist was,  
 That when the wicked feend his Lord tormented,  
 With heauenly notes, that did all other pas,  
 The outrage of his furious fit relented.  
 Such Musicke is wife words with time concented,  
 To moderate stiffe minds, disposd to strue : 20  
 Such as that prudent Romane well inuented,

l. 6, , after '*hell*'—accepted : l. 9, '*by . . . vknown*' in ( ).

What time his people into partes did riue,  
Them reconcyld againe, and to their homes did driue.

Such w<sup>f</sup>'d wife *Glauce* to that wrathfull knight,  
To calme the tempest of his troubled thought :  
Yet *Blandamour* with termes of foule despight,  
And *Paridell* her scornd, and fet at nought, /  
As old and crooked and not good for ought.  
Both they vnwife, and warelesse of the euill,  
That by themselues vnto themselues is wrought, 30  
Through that false witch, and that foule aged dreuill,  
The one a feend, the other an incarnate deuill.

With whom as they thus rode accompanide,  
They were encountred of a lustie Knight,  
That had a goodly Ladie by his side,  
To whom he made great dalliance and delight.  
It was to weete the bold Sir *Ferraugh* hight,  
He that from *Braggadocchio* whilome reft  
The snowy *Florimell*, whose beautie bright  
Made him seeme happie for so glorious theft ; 40  
Yet was it in due triall but a wandring west.

Which when as *Blandamour*, whose fancie light  
Was alwaies flitting as the wauering wind,  
After each beautie, that appeard in fight,  
Beheld, eftsoones it prickt his wanton mind  
With sting of lust, that reasons eye did blind,  
That to Sir *Paridell* these words he sent ;  
Sir knight why ride ye dumpish thus behind,  
Since so good fortune doth to you present  
So fayre a spoyle, to make you ioyous meriment ? 50

ll. 42-44, 'whose . . . fight' in ( ).

But *Paridell* that had too late a tryall  
 Of the bad issue of his counsell vaine,  
 Lift not to hearke, but made this faire denyall ;  
 Laft turne was mine, well proued to my paine,  
 This now be yours, God fend you better gaine.  
 Whose scoffed words he taking halfe in fcorne,  
 Fiercely forth prickt his steed as in difdaine,  
 Against that Knight, ere he him well could torne  
 By meanes whereof he hath him lightly ouerborne.

Who / with the sudden stroke astonisht fore, 60  
 Vpon the ground a while in flomber lay ;  
 The whiles his loue away the other bore,  
 And shewing her, did *Paridell* vpbray ;  
 Lo sluggish Knight the victors happie pray :  
 So fortune friends the bold : whom *Paridell*  
 Seeing fo faire indeede, as he did fay,  
 His hart with secret enuie gan to swell,  
 And inly grudge at him, that he had sped fo well.

Nathlesse proud man himfelfe the other deemed, 70  
 Hauing fo peerelesse paragon ygot :  
 For fure the fayrest *Florimell* him seemed,  
 To him was fallen for his happie lot,  
 Whose like aliue on earth he weened not :  
 Therefore he her did court, did ferue, did wooe,  
 With humbleft fuit that he imagine mot,  
 And all things did deuife, and all things dooe,  
 That might her loue prepare, and liking win theretoo.

She in regard thereof him recompensft  
 With golden words, and goodly countenance,

l. 62, '*Loue*': l. 66, '*as . . . fay*' in ( ).

And fuch fond fauours sparingly difpenft : 80  
 Sometimes him bleffing with a light eye-glance,  
 And coy lookes tempring with loofe dalliance ;  
 Sometimes efranging him in fterner wife,  
 That hauing caft him in a foolifh trance,  
 He feemed brought to bed in Paradife,  
 And prou'd himfelfe moft foole, in what he seem'd moft  
 wife.

So great a miftrefse of her art fhe was,  
 And perfectly practiz'd in womans craft,  
 That though therein himfelfe he thought to pas,  
 And by his false allurements wylie draft, / 90  
 Had thoufand women of their loue beraft,  
 Yet now he was surpriz'd : for that false fpight,  
 Which that fame witch had in this forme engraft,  
 Was fo expert in euery fubtile flight,  
 That it could ouerreach the wifeft earthly wight.

Yet he to her did dayly feruice more,  
 And dayly more deceiued was thereby ;  
 Yet *Paridell* him enuiet therefore,  
 As seeming plaft in fole felicity :  
 So blind is luft, false colours to defcry. 100  
 But *Ate* foone difcouering his defire,  
 And finding now fit opportunity  
 To stirre vp strife, twixt loue and fpight and ire,  
 Did priuily put coles vnto his fecret fire.

By fundry meanes thereto fhe prickt him forth,  
 Now with remembrance of thofe fpightfull fpeeches,

l. 103, , after '*strife*,' '*loue*,' '*fpight*,' and '*ire*.'

Now with opinion of his owne more worth,  
 Now with recounting of like former breaches  
 Made in their friendship, as that Hag him teaches :  
 And euer when his passion is allayd, 110  
 She it reuiues and new occasion reaches :  
 That on a time as they together way'd,  
 He made him open challenge, and thus boldly sayd.

Too boastfull *Blandamour*, too long I beare  
 The open wrongs, thou doest me day by day ;  
 Well know'st thou, whē we friendship first did sweare,  
 The couenant was, that euery spoyle or pray  
 Should equally be shard betwixt vs tway :  
 Where is my part then of this Ladie bright,  
 Whom to thy selfe thou takest quite away ? 120  
 Render therefore therein to me my right,  
 Or anwere for thy wrong, as shall fall out in fight.

Exceeding / wroth thereat was *Blandamour*,  
 And gan this bitter anwere to him make ;  
 Too foolish *Paridell*, that fayrest floure  
 Wouldst gather faine, and yet no paines wouldst take:  
 But not so easie will I her forsake ;  
 This hand her wonne, this hand shall her defend.  
 With that they gan their shiuering speares to shake,  
 And deadly points at eithers breast to bend, 130  
 Forgetfull each to haue bene euer others frend.

Their fire Steedes with so vntamed forfe  
 Did beare them both to fell auenges end,  
 That both their speares with pitileffe remorse,  
 Through shield and mayle, and haberieon did wend,

l. 115, ; for,—accepted ; l. 135, 'haberjeon.'

And in their flesh a grielly passage rend,  
 That with the furie of their owne affret,  
 Each other horfe and man to ground did fend ;  
 Where lying still a while, both did forget (set.  
 The perilous present flownd, in which their liues were

As when two warlike Brigandines at sea, 141  
 With murderous weapons arm'd to cruell fight,  
 Doe meete together on the watry lea,  
 They stemme ech other with so fell despight,  
 That with the shocke of their owne heedlesse might  
 Their wooden ribs are shaken nigh a fonder ;  
 They which from shore behold the dreadfull fight  
 Of flashing fire, and heare the ordenance thonder,  
 Do greatly stand amaz'd at such vnwonted wonder.

At length they both vpstart in amaze ; 150  
 As men awaked rashly out of dreme,  
 And round about themfelues a while did gaze,  
 Till seeing her, that *Florimell* did seme, /  
 In doubt to whom she victorie should deeme,  
 Therewith their dulled sprights they edgd anew,  
 And drawing both their swords with rage extreme,  
 Like two mad mastiffes each on other flew, (hew.  
 And shields did share, & mailles did rash, and helmes did

So furiously each other did assayle,  
 As if their foules they would attonce haue rent 160  
 Out of their brests, that streames of bloud did rayle  
 Adowne, as if their springs of life were spent ;  
 That all the ground with purple bloud was spent,  
 And all their armours staynd with bloudie gore,  
 Yet scarcely once to breath would they relent,

So mortall was their malice and fo fore,  
 Become of fayned friendship which they vow'd afore.

And that which is for Ladies most besitting,  
 To stint all strife, and foster friendly peace,  
 Was from those Dames so farre and so vnfitting, 170  
 As that in stead of praying them surcease,  
 They did much more their cruelty encrease ;  
 Bidding them fight for honour of their loue,  
 And rather die then Ladies cause release.  
 With which vaine termes so much they did the moue,  
 That both resolu'd the last extremities to proue.

There they I weene would fight vntill this day,  
 Had not a Squire, euen he the Squire of Dames,  
 By great aduenture trauelled that way ;  
 Who seeing both bent to so bloody games, 180  
 And both of old well knowing by their names,  
 Drew nigh, to weete the cause of their debate :  
 And first laide on those Ladies thousand blames,  
 That did not feeke t'appease their deadly hate,  
 But gazed on their harmes, not pitying their estate.

And / then those Knights he humbly did beseech,  
 To stay their hands, till he a while had spoken :  
 Who lookt a little vp at that his speech,  
 Yet would not let their battell so be broken,  
 Both greedie fiers on other to be wroken. 190  
 Yet he to them so earnestly did call,  
 And them coniur'd by some well knownen token,

l. 168, misprinted '*besitting*' in '96: l. 177, '*I weene*' in ( ), and so  
 l. 178, '*euen . . . Dames.*'

That they at last their wrothfull hands let fall,  
Content to heare him speake, and glad to rest withall.

First he desir'd their cause of strife to see :

They said, it was for loue of *Florimell*.

Ah gentle knights (quoth he) how may that bee,  
And she so farre astray, as none can tell.

Fond Squire, full angry then sayd *Paridell*,

Seest not the Ladie there before thy face ? 200

He looked backe, and her aduizing well,

Weend as he said, by that her outward grace,

That fayrest *Florimell* was present there in place.

Glad man was he to see that ioyous fight,

For none aliue but ioy'd in *Florimell*,

And lowly to her lowting thus behight ;

Fayrest of faire, that fairenesse doest excell,

This happie day I haue to greete you well,

In which you safe I see, whom thousand late,

Misdoubted lost through mischief that befell ; 210

Long may you liue in health and happie state.

She litle answer'd him, but lightly did aggrate.

Then turning to those Knights, he gan a new ;

And you Sir *Blandamour* and *Paridell*,

That for this Ladie present in your vew,

Haue rayf'd this cruell warre and outrage fell, /

Certes me seemes bene not aduised well,

But rather ought in friendship for her sake

To ioyne your force, their forces to repell,

ll. 196, 198, and 211, . for ,—accepted : l. 197, 'quoth he' in ( ) :  
l. 201, 'advising,' cf. C. III., l. 76, 'aduengement' : l. 205 in ( ) : l. 217,  
'mee seemes' in ( ).



That seeke perforce her from you both to take, 220  
And of your gotten spoyle their owne triumph to make.

Thereat Sir *Blandamour* with countenance sterne,  
All full of wrath, thus fiercely him bespake ;  
A read thou Squire, that I the man may learne,  
That dare fro me thinke *Florimell* to take.  
Not one (quoth he) but many doe partake  
Herein, as thus. It lately so befell,  
That *Satyrane* a girdle did vptake,  
Well knowne to appertaine to *Florimell*,  
Which for her sake he wore, as him befecmed well. 230

But when as she her selfe was lost and gone,  
Full many knights, that loued her like deare,  
Thereat did greatly grudge, that he alone  
That lost faire Ladies ornament should weare,  
And gan therefore close spight to him to beare :  
Which he to shun, and stop vile enuies sting,  
Hath lately cauf'd to be proclaim'd each where  
A solemne feast, with publike turneing,  
To which all knights with them their Ladies are to  
bring.

And of them all she that is fayrest found, 240  
Shall haue that golden girdle for reward,  
And of those Knights who is most stout on ground,  
Shall to that fairest Ladie be prefard.  
Since therefore she her selfe is now your ward,  
To you that ornament of hers pertaines,  
Against all those, that challenge it to gard,  
And faue her honour with your ventrous paines ;  
That shall you win more glory, then ye here find gaines.

When / they the reafon of his words had hard,  
They gan abate the rancour of their rage, 250  
And with their honours and their loues regard,  
The furious flames of malice to affwage.  
Tho each to other did his faith engage,  
Like faithfull friends thenceforth to ioyne in one  
With all their force, and battell ftrong to wage  
Gainft all thofe knights, as their profefsed fone,  
That challeng'd ought in *Florimell*, faue they alone.

So well accorded forth they rode together  
In friendly fort, that lafted but a while;  
And of all old diflikes they made faire weather, 260  
Yet all was forg'd and fpred with golden foyle,  
That vnder it hidde hate and hollow guyle.  
Ne certes can that friendship long endure,  
How euer gay and goodly be the fyle,  
That doth ill caufe or euill end enure :  
For vertue is the band, that bindeth harts moft fure.

Thus as they marched all in clofe difguife,  
Of fayned loue, they chaunft to ouertake  
Two knights, that lincked rode in louely wife,  
As if they fecret counfels did partake ; 270  
And each not farre behinde him had his make,  
To weete, two Ladies of moft goodly hew,  
That twixt themfelues did gentle purpofe make  
Vnmindfull both of that difcordfull crew,  
The which with speedie pace did after them purfew.

Who as they now approched nigh at hand,  
Deeming them doughtie as they did appeare,

They fent that Squire afore, to vnderstand,  
 What mote they be : who viewing them more neare/  
 Returned readie newes, that those same weare 280  
 Two of the prowest Knights in Faery lond ;  
 And those two Ladies their two louers deare,  
 Courageous *Cambell*, and stout *Triamond*,  
 With *Canacee* and *Cambine* linckt in louely bond.

Whylome as antique stories tellen vs,  
 Those two were foes the fellonest on ground,  
 And battell made the dreddest daungerous,  
 That euer shrilling trumpet did resound ;  
 Though now their acts be no where to be found,  
 As that renowned Poet them compyled, 290  
 With warlike numbers and Heroicke sound,  
 Dan *Chaucer*, well of English vndefyled,  
 On Fames eternall beadroll worthie to be fyled.

But wicked Time that all good thoughts doth wastef,  
 And workes of noblest wits to nought out weare,  
 That famous moniment hath quite defaste,  
 And robd the world of threasure endlesse deare,  
 The which mote haue enriched all vs heare.  
 O curfed Eld<sup>†</sup> the cankerworme of writs,  
 How may these rimes, so rude as doth appeare, 300  
 Hope to endure, sith workes of heauenly wits  
 Are quite deuourd, and brought to nought by little bits?

Then pardon, O most sacred happie spirit,  
 That I thy labours lost may thus reuiue,

l. 280, p. 30 is misnumbered '28' here in '96, and so p. 31 is '29': l. 283, 'Triamond'—this is the first occurrence of the name for 'Telamond' of C. I., Introduction l. 5: l. 292, 'Well . . . vndefiled' in ( ): l. 299, '†' after 'Eld': l. 300, 'so . . . appeare' in ( ).

And steale from thee the meede of thy due merit,  
 That none durst euer whilest thou wast aliuē,  
 And being dead in vaine yet many striue :  
 Ne darē I like, but through infusion sweete  
 Of thine owne spirit, which doth in me suruiue,  
 I follow here the footing of thy feete, 310  
 That with thy meaning so I may the rather meete.

*Cambelloes* / sister was fayre *Canacee*,  
 That was the learnedst Ladie in her dayes,  
 Well seene in euerie science that mote bee,  
 And euery secret worke of natures wayes,  
 In wittie riddles, and in wise soothsayes,  
 In power of herbes, and tunes of beafts and burds ;  
 And, that augmented all her other prayse,  
 She modest was in all her deedes and words,  
 And wondrous chaste of life, yet lou'd of Knights &  
 Lords. 320

Full many Lords, and many Knights her loued,  
 Yet she to none of them her liking lent,  
 Ne euer was with fond affection moued,  
 But rul'd her thoughts with goodly gouernement,  
 For dread of blame and honours blemishment ;  
 And eke vnto her lookes a law she made,  
 That none of them once out of order went,  
 But like to warie Centonels well stayd,  
 Still watcht on euery side, of secret foes affrayd.

So much the more as she refused to loue, 330  
 So much the more she loued was and fought,

l. 309, 'which . . . suruiue' in ( ) : l. 318, 'that . . . prayse' in ( ).

That oftentimes vnquiet strife did moue  
 Amongst her louers, and great quarrels wrought,  
 That oft for her in bloudie armes they fought.  
 Which whenas *Cambell*, that was stout and wise,  
 Perceiu'd would breede great mischiefe, he bethought  
 How to preuent the perill that mote rise,  
 And turne both him and her to honour in this wife.

One day, when all that troupe of warlike wooers  
 Asssembled were, to weet whose she should bee, 340  
 All mightie men and dreadfull derring doers,  
 (The harder it to make them well agree) /  
 Amongst them all this end he did decree ;  
 That of them all, which loue to her did make,  
 They by consent should chose the stoutest three,  
 That with himselfe should combat for her sake,  
 And of them all the victour should his sifter take.

Bold was the chalenge, as himselfe was bold,  
 And courage full of haughtie hardiment,  
 Approued oft in perils manifold, 350  
 Which he atchieu'd to his great ornament :  
 But yet his sifters skill vnto him lent  
 Most confidence and hope of happie speed,  
 Conceiued by a ring, which she him sent,  
 That mongst the manie vertucs, which we reed,  
 Had power to staunch al wounds, that mortally did  
 bleed.

Well was that rings great vertue knowen to all,  
 That dread thereof, and his redoubted might

l. 335, '*that . . . wife*' in ( ) : l. 355, '*which . . . reed*' in ( ).

Did all that youthly rout so much appall,  
 That none of them durst vndertake the fight ; 360  
 More wise they weend to make of loue delight,  
 Then life to hazard for faire Ladies looke ;  
 And yet vncertaine by such outward fight,  
 Though for her sake they all that perill tooke,  
 Whether she would them loue, or in her liking brooke.

Amongst those knights there were three brethren bold,  
 Three bolder brethren neuer were yborne,  
 Borne of one mother in one happie mold,  
 Borne at one burden in one happie morne ;  
 Thrife happie mother, and thrife happie morne, 370  
 That bore three such, three such not to be fond ;  
 Her name was *Agape* whose children werne  
 All three as one, the first hight *Priamond*,  
 The second *Dyamond*, the youngest *Triamond*.

Stout / *Priamond*, but not so strong to strike,  
 Strong *Diamond*, but not so stout a knight,  
 But *Triamond* was stout and strong alike :  
 On horsebacke vsed *Triamond* to fight,  
 And *Priamond* on foote had more delight,  
 But horse and foote knew *Diamond* to wield : 380  
 With curtaxe vsed *Diamond* to smite,  
 And *Triamond* to handle speare and shield,  
 But speare and curtaxe both vsed *Priamond* in field.

These three did loue each other dearely well,  
 And with so firme affection were allyde,  
 As if but one soule in them all did dwell,  
 Which did her powre into three parts diuylde ;

ll. 362 and 369, ; for ,—accepted : l. 364 in ( ), and so l. 367.

Like three faire branches budding farre and wide,  
 That from one roote deriu'd their vitall sap :  
 And like that roote that doth her life diuide, 390  
 Their mother was, and had full blessed hap,  
 These three so noble babes to bring forth at one clap.

Their mother was a Fay, and had the skill  
 Of secret things, and all the powres of nature,  
 Which she by art could vse vnto her will,  
 And to her seruice bind each liuing creature :  
 Through secret vnderstanding of their feature.  
 Thereto she was right faire, when so her face  
 She list discouer, and of goodly stature ;  
 But she as Fayes are wont, in priuie place 400  
 Did spend her dayes, and lov'd in forests wyld to space.

There on a day a noble youthly knight  
 Seeking aduentures in the saluage wood,  
 Did by great fortune get of her the fight ;  
 As she fate carelesse by a cristall flood,  
 Combing her golden lockes, as seemd her good :  
 And vnawares vpon her laying hold,  
 That stroue in vaine him long to haue withstood,  
 Oppressed her, and there (as it is told),  
 Got these three louely babes, that prov'd three châpions  
 bold. 410

Which she with her long fostred in that wood,  
 Till that to ripenesse of mans state they grew :  
 Then shewing forth signes of their fathers blood,  
 They loued armes, and knighthood did enfew,

l. 400, 'as . . . wont' in ( ).

Seeking aduentures, where they anie knew.  
 Which when their mother saw, she gan to dout  
 Their safetie, leaft by searching daungers new,  
 And rash prouoking perils all about,  
 Their days mote be abridged through their corage stout.

Therefore defirous th'end of all their dayes 420  
 To know, and them t'enlarge with long extent,  
 By wondrous skill, and many hidden wayes,  
 To the three fatall sisters houle she went.  
 Farre vnder ground from tract of liuing went,  
 Downe in the bottome of the deepe *Abyffe*,  
 Where *Demogorgon* in dull darknesse pent,  
 Farre from the view of Gods and heauens blis,  
 The hideous *Chaos* keepes, their dreadfull dwelling is.

There she them found, all sitting round about  
 The direfull distaffe standing in the mid, 430  
 And with vnwearied fingers drawing out  
 The lines of life, from liuing knowledge hid.  
 Sad *Clotho* held the rocke, the whiles the thrid  
 By griesly *Lachesis* was spun with paine,  
 That cruell *Atropos* eftsoones vndid,  
 With curfed knife cutting the twist in twaine :  
 Most wretched men, whose dayes depend on thrids fo  
 vaine. /

She them saluting, there by them sate still,  
 Beholding how the thrids of life they span :  
 And when at last she had beheld her fill, 440  
 Trembling in heart, and looking pale and wan,

l. 437, '!' after 'vaine.'



Her cause of comming she to tell began.  
 To whom fierce *Atropos*, Bold Fay, that durst  
 Come see the secret of the life of man,  
 Well worthie thou to be of *Ioue* accurst,  
 And eke thy childrens thrids to be afunder burst.

Whereat she fore affrayd, yet her besought  
 To graunt her boone, and rigour to abate,  
 That she might see her childrēs thrids forth brought,  
 And know the measure of their vtmost date, 450  
 To them ordained by eternall fate.  
 Which *Clotho* graunting, shewed her the fame :  
 That when she saw, it did her much amate,  
 To see their thrids so thin, as spiders frame,  
 And eke so short, that seemd their ends out shortly  
 came.

She then began them humbly to intreate,  
 To draw them longer out, and better twine,  
 That so their liues might be prolonged late. 460  
 But *Lachesis* thereat gan to repine,  
 And sayd, fond dame that deem'ft of things diuine  
 As of humane, that they may altred bee,  
 And chaung'd at pleasure for those impes of thine.  
 Not so ; for what the Fates do once decree,  
 Not all the gods can chaunge, nor *Ioue* him self can free.

Then since (quoth she) the terme of each mans life  
 For nought may lessened nor enlarged bee,  
 Graunt this, that when ye shred with fatall knife  
 His line, which is the eldest of the three, /

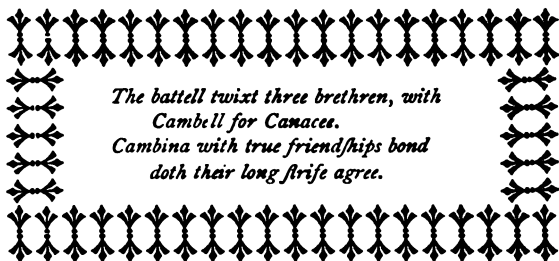
Which is of them the shortest, as I see,  
Eftfoones his life may passe into the next ; 470  
And when the next shall likewise ended bee,  
That both their liues may likewise be annex  
Vnto the third, that his may so be trebly wext.

They graunted it ; and then that carefull Fay  
Departed thence with full contented mynd ;  
And comming home, in warlike fresh aray  
Them found all three according to their kynd :  
But vnto them what destinie was affynd,  
Or how their liues were eekt, she did not tell ;  
But euermore, when she fit time could fynd, 480  
She warned them to tend their safeties well,  
And loue each other deare, what euer them befell.

So did they furely during all their dayes,  
And neuer discord did amongst them fall ;  
Which much augmented all their other praise.  
And now t'increase affection naturall,  
In loue of *Canacee* they ioyned all :  
Vpon which ground this same great battell grew,  
Great matter growing of beginning small ; 490  
The which for length I will not here pursew,  
But rather will referue it for a Canto new.

L. 473, '*fo be*'—Dr. Morris queries '*be fo* (?)': L. 489 in ( ).

## Cant. I III.



O Why doe wretched men so much desire,  
To draw their dayes vnto the vtmost date,  
And doe not rather with them soone expire,  
Knowing the miserie of their estate,  
And thousand perills which them still awate, 10  
Tossing them like a boate amid the mayne,  
That euery houre they knocke at deathes gate?  
And he that happie seemes and least in payne,  
Yet is as nigh his end, as he that most doth playne.

Therefore this Fay I hold but fond and vaine,  
The which in seeking for her children three  
Long life, thereby did more prolong their paine.  
Yet whilest they liued none did euer fee  
More happie creatures, then they seem'd to bee,  
Nor more ennobled for their courtesie, 20  
That made them dearely lou'd of each degree;  
Ne more renowned for their cheualrie,  
That made them dreaded much of all men farre and nie.

1. 2, , after 'brethren'—accepted, and period (.) 1. 3.

Theſe three that hardie challenge tooke in hand,  
 For *Canacee* with *Cambell* for to fight :  
 The day was fet, that all might vnderſtand,  
 And pledges pawnd the ſame to keepe a right, /  
 That day, the dreddeſt day that liuing wight  
 Did euer ſee vpon this world to ſhine,  
 So foone as heauens window ſhewed light, 30  
 Theſe warlike Champions all in armour ſhine,  
 Aſſembled were in field, the challenge to define.

The field with liſtes was all about encloſ'd,  
 To barre the preaſe of people farre away ;  
 And at th'one ſide fixe iudges were diſpoſ'd,  
 To view and deeme the deedes of armes that day ;  
 And on the other ſide in freſh aray,  
 Fayre *Canacee* vpon a ſtately ſtage  
 Was fet, to ſee the fortune of that fray,  
 And to be ſeene, as his moſt worthie wage, 40  
 That could her purchaſe with his liues aduentur'd  
 gage.

Then entred *Cambell* firſt into the liſt,  
 With ſtately ſteps, and feareleſſe countenance,  
 As if the conqueſt his he ſurely wiſt.  
 Soone after did the brethren three aduance,  
 In braue aray and goodly amenance,  
 With ſcutchins gilt and banners broad diſplayd :  
 And marching thrife in warlike ordinance,  
 Thrife lowted lowly to the noble Mayd,  
 The whiles ſhril trumpets & loud clarions ſweetly  
 playd. 50

ll. 28-9, '*the* . . . *ſhine*' in ( ) : l. 39, '*fortune*' in 90 (misprint).

Which doen, the doughty challenger came forth,  
 All arm'd to point his chalenge to abet :  
 Gainst whom Sir *Priamond* with equall worth :  
 And equall armes himfelfe did forward set.  
 A trompet blew ; they both together met,  
 With dreadfull force, and furious intent,  
 Carelesse of perill in their fiers affret,  
 As if that life to losse they had forelent,  
 And cared not to spare, that should be shortly spent.

Right / practicke was Sir *Priamond* in fight, 60  
 And throughly skild in vse of shield and speare ;  
 Ne lesse approued was *Cambelloes* might,  
 Ne lesse his skill in weapons did appeare,  
 That hard it was to weene which harder were.  
 Full many mighty strokes on either side  
 Were sent, that seemed death in them to beare,  
 But they were both so watchfull and well eyde,  
 That they auoyded were, and vainely by did flyde.

Yet one of many was so strongly bent  
 By *Priamond*, that with vnluckie glaunce, 70  
 Through *Cambels* shoulder it vnwarely went,  
 That forced him his shield to disaduaunce :  
 Much was he grieued with that gracelesse chaunce,  
 Yet from the wound no drop of bloud there fell,  
 But wondrous paine, that did the more enhaunce  
 His haughtie courage to aduengement fell :  
 Smart daunts not mighty harts, but makes them more  
 to swell.

l. 51, , after 'doen'—accepted : l. 53, '*Priamond*' in '96 (misprint)  
 l. 63, '*skill*'—misprinted '*fill*' in '96 : l. 72, : substituted for ,—accepted :  
 l. 76, '*auengement*.'

With that his poynant speare he fierce auentred,  
 With doubled force clofe vnderneath his shield,  
 That through the mayles into his thigh it entred,  
 And there arresting, readie way did yield,  
 For bloud to gush forth on the graffie field ;  
 That he for paine himselfe not right vpreare,  
 But too and fro in great amazement reel'd,  
 Like an old Oke whose pith and sap is seare,  
 At puffle of euery storme doth stagger here and there.

Whom so dismayd when *Cambell* had espide,  
 Againe he droue at him with double might,  
 That nought mote stay the steele, till in his side  
 The mortall point most cruelly empight : / 90  
 Where fast infixed, whilest he sought by flight  
 It forth to wrest, the staffe a funder brake,  
 And left the head behind : with which despight  
 He all enrag'd, his shiuering speare did shake,  
 And charging him a freshe thus felly him befpage.

To faitour there thy meede vnto thee take,  
 The meede of thy mischallenge and abet :  
 Not for thine owne, but for thy sisters sake,  
 Haue I thus long thy life vnto thee let :  
 But to forbear doth not forgiue the det. 100  
 The wicked weapon heard his wrathfull vow,  
 And passing forth with furious affret,  
 Pierst through his beuer quite into his brow,  
 That with the force it backward forced him to bow.

Therewith a funder in the midst it braft,  
 And in his hand nought but the troncheon left,

The other halfe behind yet sticking fast,  
 Out of his headpeece *Cambell* fiercely reft,  
 And with fuch furie backe at him it heft,  
 That making way vnto his deareft life, 110  
 His weafand pipe it through his gorget cleft :  
 Thence ftreames of purple bloud iffuing rife,  
 Let forth his wearie ghofth and made an end of strife.

His wearie ghofth affoyld from flefhly band,  
 Did not as others wont, directly fly  
 Vnto her reft in Plutoes grieved land,  
 Ne into ayre did vanifh prefently,  
 Ne chaunged was into a ftarre in fky :  
 But through traduction was eftfoones deriued,  
 Like as his mother prayd the Deflinie, 120  
 Into his fecond brother, that furiued,  
 In whom he liu'd a new, of former life depriued.

Whom / when on ground his brother next beheld,  
 Though fad and forie for fo heauy fight,  
 Yet leaue vnto his forrow did not yeeld,  
 But rather ftird to vengeance and despight,  
 Through fecret feeling of his generous fpright ;  
 Rufht fiercely forth, the battell to renew,  
 As in reuerfion of his brothers right ;  
 And chalenging the Virgin as his dew. 130  
 His foe was foone addrest : the trumpets fhrewly blew.

With that they both together fiercely met,  
 As if that each ment other to deuoure ;  
 And with their axes both fo forely bet,  
 That neither plate nor mayle, whereas their powre

l. 115, 'as . . . wont' in ( ) : l. 121, 'fecond brother'—misprinted  
 'other brethren' in '96 : l. 127, ; put for , .

They felt, could once sustaine the hideous stowre,  
But riued were like rotten wood a sunder, (showre  
Whilest through their rifts the ruddie bloud did  
And fire did flash, like lightning after thunder,  
That fild the lookers on attonce with ruth and wonder.

As when two Tygers prickt with hungers rage, 141  
Haue by good fortune found some beafts fresh spoyle,  
On which they weene their famine to assuage,  
And gaine a feastfull guerdon of their toyle,  
Both falling out doe stirre vp strifefull broyle,  
And cruell battell twixt themselues doe make,  
Whiles neither lets the other touch the soyle,  
But either sdeignes with other to partake :  
So cruelly these Knights stroue for that Ladies sake.

Full many strokes, that mortally were ment, 150  
The whiles were enterchaunged twixt them two ;  
Yet they were all with so good wariment  
Or warded, or auoyded and let goe, /  
That still the life stood fearelesse of her foe :  
Till *Diamond* disdeigning long delay  
Of doubtfull fortune wauering to and fro,  
Resolu'd to end it one or other way ;  
And heau'd his murderous axe at him with mighty fway.

The dreadfull stroke in case it had arriued,  
Where it was ment, (so deadly it was ment) 160  
The foule had sure out of his bodie riued,  
And stinted all the strife incontinent.  
But *Cambels* fate that fortune did preuent :  
For seeing it at hand, he swaru'd asyde,  
And so gaue way vnto his fell intent :



Who missing of the marke which he had eyde, (flyde.  
Was with the force nigh feld whilst his right foot did

As when a Vulture greedie of his pray,  
Through hunger long, that hart to him doth lend,  
Strikes at an Heron with all his bodies fway, 170  
That from his force seemes nought may it defend;  
The warie fowle that spies him toward bend  
His dreadfull soufe auoydes, it shunning light,  
And maketh him his wing in vaine to spend;  
That with the weight of his owne weeldlesse might,  
He falleth nigh to ground, and scarfe recouereth flight.

Which faire aduenture when *Cambello* spide,  
Full lightly, ere himselfe he could recower,  
From daungers dread to ward his naked side,  
He can let driue at him with all his power, 180  
And with his axe him smote in euill hower,  
That from his shoulders quite his head he reft:  
The headlesse tronke, as heedlesse of that flower,  
Stood still a while, and his fast footing kept,  
Till feeling life to fayle, it fell, and deadly slept.

They / which that piteous spectacle beheld,  
Were much amaz'd the headlesse tronke to see  
Stand vp so long, and weapon vaine to weld,  
Vnweeting of the Fates diuine decree,  
For lifes succession in those brethren three. 190  
For notwithstanding that one soule was reft,  
Yet, had the bodie not dismembred bee,

l. 173, , after 'auoydes' instead of after 'soufe'—accepted: l. 177, 'ad-venture' = misadventure giving the opportunity. Some stupidly would read 'advantage': l. 180, 'can' = 'gan, *ut freq.*

It would haue liued, and reuiued eft ;  
But finding no fit feat, the lifeleffe corse it left.

It left ; but that fame foule, which therein dwelt,  
Streight entring into *Triamond*, him fild  
With double life, and grieve ; which when he felt,  
As one whose inner parts had bene ythrild  
With point of steele, that close his hartbloud spild,  
He lightly lept out of his place of rest, 200  
And rushing forth into the emptie field,  
Against *Cambello* fiercely him address ;  
Who him affronting soone to fight was readie preft.

Well mote ye wonder how that noble Knight,  
After he had so often wounded beene,  
Could stand on foot, now to renew the fight.  
But had ye then him forth aduauncing seene,  
Some newborne wight ye would him surely weene :  
So fresh he seemed and so fierce in fight ;  
Like as a Snake, whom wearie winters teene, 210  
Hath worne to nought, now feeling sommers might,  
Casts off his ragged skin and freshly doth him dight.

All was through vertue of the ring he wore,  
The which not onely did not from him let  
One drop of bloud to fall, but did restore  
His weakned powers, and dulled spirits whet, /  
Through working of the stone therein yset.  
Else how could one of equall might with most,  
Against so many no lesse mightie met,  
Once thinke to match three such on equall cost, 220  
Three such as able were to match a puissant host.

Yet nought thereof was *Triamond* adredde,  
 Ne desperate of glorious victorie,  
 But sharply him assayld, and sore bestedde,  
 With heapes of strokes, which he at him let flie,  
 As thicke as hayle forth poured from the skie :  
 He stroke, he foust, he foynd, he hewd, he lasht,  
 And did his yron brond so fast applie,  
 That from the fame the fierie sparkles flasht,  
 As fast as water-sprinkles gainst a rocke are dasht. 230

Much was *Cambello* daunted with his blowes,  
 So thicke they fell, and forcibly were sent,  
 That he was forst from daunger of the throwes  
 Backe to tetire, and somewhat to relent,  
 Till th'heat of his fierce furie he had spent :  
 Which when for want of breath gan to abate,  
 He then afresh with new encouragement  
 Did him assayle, and mightily amate,  
 As fast as forward erst, now backward to retrate.

Like as the tide that comes fro th'Ocean mayne, 240  
 Flowes vp the Shenan with contrarie forse,  
 And ouerruling him in his owne rayne,  
 Driues backe the current of his kindly course,  
 And makes it seeme to haue some other source :  
 But when the floud is spent, then backe againe  
 His borrowed waters forst to redisbourse,  
 He sends the sea his owne with double gaine,  
 And tribute eke withall, as to his Soueraine.

Thus / did the battell varie to and fro,  
 With diuerse fortune doubtfull to be deemed : 250

l. 233, 'from . . . throwes' in ( ).

Now this the better had, now had his fo ;  
 Then he halfe vanquisht, then the other seemed ;  
 Yet victors both them selues alwayes esteemed.  
 And all the while the difentrayled blood  
 Adowne their sides like litle riuers stremed,  
 That with the wafting of his vitall flood,  
 Sir *Triamond* at laft full faint and feeble stood.

But *Cambell* still more strong and greater grew,  
 Ne felt his blood to waft, ne powres emperisht,  
 Through that rings vertue, that with vigour new, 260  
 Still when as he enfeebled was, him cherisht,  
 And all his wounds, and all his brufes guarisht :  
 Like as a withered tree through husbands toyle  
 Is often seene full freshly to haue florisht,  
 And fruitfull apples to haue borne awhile,  
 As fresh as when it first was planted in the soyle.

Through which aduantage, in his strength he rose,  
 And smote the other with so wondrous might,  
 That through the seame, which did his hauberk close,  
 Into his throate and life it pierced quight, 270  
 That downe he fell as dead in all mens fight :  
 Yet dead he was not, yet he sure did die,  
 As all men do, that lose the liuing spright :  
 So did one foule out of his bodie flie  
 Vnto her natieue home from mortall miserie.

But nathelesse whilst all the lookers on  
 Him dead behight, as he to all appeared,  
 All vnawares he started vp anon,  
 As one that had out of a dreame bene reard, /

l. 252, ; for, —accepted : l. 262, † for, —accepted.

And fresh assayld his foe ; who halfe affeard      280  
 Of th'vncouth sight, as he some ghost had seene,  
 Stood still amaz'd, holding his idle sweard ;  
 Till hauing often by him stricken beene,  
 He forced was to strike, and saue him selfe from teene.

Yet from thenceforth more warily he fought,  
 As one in feare the Stygian gods t'offend,  
 Ne followd on so fast, but rather fought  
 Him selfe to saue, and daunger to defend,  
 Then life and labour both in vaine to spend.  
 Which *Triamond* perceiuing, weened sure      290  
 He gan to faint, toward the battels end,  
 And that he should not long on foote endure ;  
 A signe which did to him the victorie assure.

Whereof full blith, eftsoones his mightie hand  
 He heav'd on high, in mind with that same blow  
 To make an end of all that did withstand :  
 Which *Cambell* seeing come, was nothing flow  
 Him selfe to saue from that so deadly throw ;  
 And at that instant reaching forth his sweard  
 Clofe vnderneath his shield, that scarce did show, 300  
 Stroke him, as he his hand to strike vpreard,  
 In th'arm-pit full, that through both fides the wound  
 appeard.

Yet still that direfull stroke kept on his way,  
 And falling heaueie on *Cambelloes* creft,  
 Strooke him so hugely, that in swowne he lay,  
 And in his head an hideous wound imprest :

ll. 280 and 292, ; for ,—accepted : l. 299, '*sword*.'

And fure had it not happily found rest  
 Vpon the brim of his brode plated shield,  
 It would haue cleft his braine downe to his brest.  
 So both at once fell dead vpon the field, 310  
 And each to other seemd the victorie to yield.

Which / when as all the lookers on beheld,  
 They weened fure the warre was at an end,  
 And Iudges rose, and Marshals of the field  
 Broke vp the liftes, their armes away to rend ;  
 And *Canacee* gan wayle her dearest frend.  
 All suddenly they both vpstart light,  
 The one out of the frownd, which him did blend,  
 The other breathing now another spright,  
 And fiercely each assayling, gan afresh to fight. 320

Long while they then continued in that wize,  
 As if but then the battell had begonne :  
 Strokes, wounds, wards, weapons, all they did despise,  
 Ne either car'd to ward, or perill shonne,  
 Defirous both to haue the battell donne ;  
 Ne either cared life to faue or spill,  
 Ne which of them did winne, ne which were wonne.  
 So wearie both of fighting had their fill,  
 That life it selfe seemd loathsome, and long safetie ill.

Whilft thus the case in doubtfull ballance hong, 330  
 Vnsure to whether side it would incline,  
 And all mens eyes and hearts, which there among  
 Stood gazing, filled were with rufull tine,

L 323, '*wards*'—Church suggested '*fwords*' (tautological and needless).

And secreet feare, to see their fatall fine ;  
 All suddenly they heard a troublous noyes,  
 That seemd some perilous tumult to define,  
 Confusd with womens cries, and shouts of boyes,  
 Such as the troubled Theaters oftimes annoyes.

Thereat the Champions both stood still a space,  
 To weeten what that sudden clamour ment ; 340  
 Lo where they spyde with speedie whirling pace,  
 One in a charet of straunge furniment, /  
 Towards them driuing like a storme out sent.  
 The charet decked was in wondrous wize,  
 With gold and many a gorgeous ornament,  
 After the Perfian Monarks antique guize,  
 Such as the maker selfe could best by art deuize.

And drawne it was (that wonder is to tell)  
 Of two grim lyons, taken from the wood,  
 In which their powre all others did excell ; 350  
 Now made forget their former cruell mood,  
 T'obey their riders heft, as seemed good.  
 And therein fate a Ladie passing faire  
 And bright, that seemed borne of Angels brood,  
 And with her beautie bountie did compare,  
 Whether of them in her should haue the greater share.

Thereto she learned was in Magicke leare,  
 And all the artes, that subtill wits discouer,  
 Hauing therein bene trained many a yeare,  
 And well instructed by the Fay her mother, 360  
 That in the same she farre exceld all other.

Who vnderstanding by her mightie art,  
Of th'euill plight, in which her dearest brother  
Now stood, came forth in hast to take his part,  
And pacifie the strife, which cauld so deadly smart.

And as she passed through th'vnruly preace  
Of people, thronging thicke her to behold,  
Her angrie teame breaking their bonds of peace,  
Great heapes of them, like sheepe in narrow fold,  
For haft did ouer-runne, in dust enrould, 370  
That thorough rude confusion of the rout,  
Some fearing shriekt, some being harmed hould,  
Some laught for sport, some did for wonder shout,  
And some that would feeme wife, their wonder turnd  
to dout. /

In her right hand a rod of peace shee bore,  
About the which two Serpents weren wound,  
Entrayled mutually in louely lore,  
And by the tailes together firmly bound,  
And both were with one oliue garland crownd,  
Like to the rod which *Maia*s sonne doth wield, 380  
Wherewith the hellish fiends he doth confound.  
And in her other hand a cup she hild,  
The which was with Nepenthe to the brim vpild.

Nepenthe is a drinck of fouerayne grace,  
Deuized by the Gods, for to asswage  
Harts grief, and bitter gall away to chace,  
Which stirs vp anguish and contentious rage :  
In stead thereof sweet peace and quiet age  
It doth establisth in the troubled mynd.  
Few men, but such as sober are and sage, 390



Are by the Gods to drinck thereof assynd ;  
But such as drinck, eternall happineffe do fynd.

Such famous men, such worthies of the earth,  
As *Ioue* will haue aduaunced to the skie,  
And there made gods, though borne of mortall berth,  
For their high merits and great dignitie,  
Are wont, before they may to heauen flie,  
To drinke hereof, whereby all cares forepast  
Are washt away quite from their memorie.  
So did those olde Heroes hereof taste, 400  
Before that they in blisse amongst the Gods were plaste.

Much more of price and of more gracious powre  
Is this, then that same water of Ardenne,  
The which *Rinaldo* drunck in happie howre,  
Described by that famous Tufcane penne : /  
For that had might to change the hearts of men  
Fro loue to hate, a change of euill choise :  
But this doth hatred make in loue to brenne,  
And heauy heart with comfort doth reioyce.  
Who would not to this vertue rather yeeld his voice ?

At last arriuing by the lifest side, 411  
Shee with her rod did softly smite the raile ;  
Which straight flew ope, and gaue her way to ride.  
Eftsoones out of her Coch she gan auaile,  
And pacing fairely forth, did bid all haile,  
First to her brother, whom she loued deare,  
That so to see him made her heart to quaile :  
And next to *Cambell*, whose sad ruefull cheare  
Made her to change her hew, and hidden loue t'appare.

1. 412, ; for,—accepted.

They lightly her requit (for small delight                    420  
 They had as then her long to entertaine,)  
 And eft them turned both againe to fight ;  
 Which when she faw, downe on the bloudy plaine  
 Her felfe she threw, and teares gan shed amaine ;  
 Amongft her teares immixing prayers meeke,  
 And with her prayers reasons to reftaine  
 From bloudy strife, and blessed peace to feeke,  
 By all that vnto them was deare, did them befeeke.

But when as all might nought with them preuaile,  
 Shee fmote them lightly with her powrefull wand. 430  
 Then fuddenly as if their hearts did faile,  
 Their wrathfull blades downe fell out of their hand,  
 And they like men astonisht ftill did ftand.  
 Thus whileft their minds were doubtfully diftraught,  
 And mighty fpirites bound with mightier band,  
 Her golden cup to them for drinke she raught,  
 Whereof full glad for thirft, ech drunk an harty  
 draught.

Of / which fo foone as they once tafted had,  
 Wonder it is that fudden change to fee :  
 Instead of ftrokes, each other kifft glad,                    440  
 And louely haulft from feare of treason free,  
 And plighted hands for ever friends to be.  
 When all men faw this fudden change of things,  
 So mortall foes fo friendly to agree,  
 For paffing ioy, which fo great maruaile brings,  
 They all gan shout aloud, that all the heauen rings.

l. 422, ; for ,—accepted : ll. 426-7, , removed after '*reftaine*'—accepted,  
 and '*with . . . feeke*' in ( ): l. 439 in ( ).

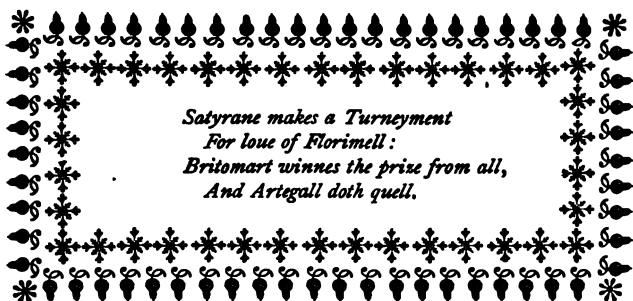
All which, when gentle *Canacee* beheld,  
 In haſt ſhe from her lofty chaire deſcended,  
 Too weet what ſudden tidings was beſeld :  
 Where when ſhe ſaw that cruell war ſo ended, 45 0  
 And deadly foes ſo faithfully affrended,  
 In louely wife ſhe gan that Lady greet,  
 Which had ſo great diſmay ſo well amended,  
 And entertaining her with curt'ſies meet,  
 Profeſt to her true frienſhip and affection ſweet.

Thus when they all accorded goodly were,  
 The trumpets ſounded, and they all aroſe,  
 Thence to depart with glee and gladſome chere.  
 Thoſe warlike champions both together choſe,  
 Homeward to march, themſelues there to reſoſe, 46 O  
 And wife *Cambina* taking by her ſide  
 Faire *Canacee*, as freſh as morning roſe,  
 Vnto her Coch remounting, home did ride,  
 Admir'd of all the people, and much glorifide.

Where making ioyous feaſt their daies they ſpent  
 In perfect loue, deuoid of hatefull ſtrife,  
 Allide with bands of mutuall couplement ;  
 For *Triamond* had *Canacee* to wife, /  
 With whom he ledd a long and happie life ;  
 And *Cambel* tooke *Cambina* to his fere, 470  
 The which as life were each to other lief.  
 So all alike did loue, and loued were,  
 That ſince their days ſuch louers were not found elſwhere.

L. 473, 'elſwere' in '96—text accepted from 1609.

## Cant. IIII.



**I**T often fals, (as here it earft befell)  
 That mortall foes doe turne to faithfull frends,  
 And friends profest are chaungd to foemen fell :  
 The caufe of both, of both their minds depends ;  
 And th'end of both likewise of both their ends. 10  
 For enmitie, that of no ill proceeds,  
 But of occasion, with th'occasion ends ;  
 And friendship, which a faint affection breeds  
 Without regard of good, dyes like ill grounded seeds.

That well (me seemes) appeares, by that of late  
 Twixt *Cambell* and Sir *Triamond* befell,  
 As els by this, that now a new debate  
 Stird vp twixt *Scudamour* and *Paridell*,  
 The which by course befals me here to tell :  
 Who hauing those two other Knights espide, 20  
 Marching afore, as ye remember well,

<sup>l</sup> 9, ; for .—accepted : *ib.*, 'lives' for 'minds'—see Glossary, s.v. :  
<sup>l</sup> 17, 'als' : l. 18, '*Blandamour*' in 1679.

Sent forth their Squire to haue them both descride,  
And eke those masked Ladies riding them beside.

Who / backe returning, told as he had seene,  
That they were doughtie knights of dreaded name ;  
And those two Ladies, their two loues vnfeene ;  
And therefore wisht them without blot or blame,  
To let them passe at will, for dread of shame.  
But *Blandamour* full of vainglorious spright,  
And rather stird by his discordfull Dame, 30  
Vpon them gladly would haue prov'd his might,  
But that he yet was fore of his late lucklesse fight.

Yet nigh approaching, he them fowle bespake,  
Disgracing them, him selfe thereby to grace,  
As was his wont ; so weening way to make  
To Ladies loue, where so he came in place,  
And with lewd termes their louers to deface.  
Whose sharpe prouokement them incenst so sore,  
That both were bent t'auenge his vsage base,  
And gan their shields addresse them selues afore : 40  
For euill deedes may better then bad words be bore.

But faire *Cambina* with perswasions myld,  
Did mitigate the fiercenesse of their mode,  
That for the present they were reconcyld,  
And gan to treat of deeds of armes abroad,  
And strange aduentures, all the way they rode :  
Amongst the which they told, as then befell,  
Of that great turney, which was blazed brode,  
For that rich girdle of faire *Florimell*,  
The prize of her, which did in beautie most excell. 50

To which folke-mote they all with one consent,  
 Sith each of them his Ladie had him by,  
 Whose beautie each of them thought excellent,  
 Agreed to trauell, and their fortunes try. /  
 So as they passed forth, they did espy  
 One in bright armes, with ready speare in rest,  
 That toward them his course seem'd to apply ;  
 Gainst whom Sir *Paridell* himfelfe addrest,  
 Him weening, ere he nigh approcht to haue replest.

Which th'other seeing, gan his course relent, 60  
 And vaunted speare eftsoones to disaduaunce,  
 As if he naught but peace and pleasure ment,  
 Now false into their fellowship by chance ;  
 Whereat they shewed courteous countenance.  
 So as he rode with them accompanide,  
 His rouing eie did on the Lady glaunce,  
 Which *Blandamour* had riding by his fide :  
 Whō sure he weend, that he some wher tofore had  
 eide.

It was to weete that snowy *Florimell*,  
 Which *Ferrat* late from *Braggadocchio* wonne, 70  
 Whom he now seeing, her remembred well,  
 How hauing rest her from the witches sonne,  
 He soone her lost : wherefore he now begunne  
 To challenge her anew, as his owne prize,  
 Whom formerly he had in battell wonne,  
 And proffer made by force her to reprice :  
 Which scornefull offer, *Blandamour* gan soone despize.

l. 57, ; put for , : l. 60, 'seeming' '96 (misprint) : l. 63, ; for ,—  
 accepted : l. 70, 'Ferrau' : l. 76, : for ,—accepted.

And said, Sir Knight, sith ye this Lady clame,  
 Whom he that hath, were loth to lose so light,  
 (For so to lose a Lady, were great shame) 80  
 Yee shall her winne, as I haue done in fight :  
 And lo shee shall be placed here in fight,  
 Together with this Hag beside her set,  
 That who so winnes her, may her haue by right :  
 But he shall haue the Hag that is ybet,  
 And with her alwaies ride, till he another get.

That / offer pleased all the company,  
 So *Florimell* with *Ate* forth was brought,  
 At which they all gan laugh full merrily :  
 But *Braggadochio* said, he neuer thought  
 For such an Hag, that seemed worfe then nought, 90  
 His person to emperill so in fight.  
 But if to match that Lady they had fought  
 Another like, that were like faire and bright,  
 His life he then would spend to iustifie his right.

At which his vaine excuse they all gan smile,  
 As scorning his vnmanly cowardize :  
 And *Florimell* him fowly gan reuile,  
 That for her fake refus'd to enterprize  
 The battell, offred in so knightly wise. 100  
 And *Ate* eke prouokt him priuily,  
 With loue of her, and shame of such mesprize.  
 But naught he car'd for friend or enemy,  
 For in base mind no friendship dwels nor enmity.

l. 82, , for . —accepted : l. 90, 'worst' in '96, text accepted from 1609 :  
 l. 99, 'refus'd' for 'refuse'—accepted.

But *Cambell* thus did shut vp all in iest,  
 Braue Knights and Ladies, certes ye doe wrong  
 To stirre vp strife, when most vs needeth rest,  
 That we may vs referue both fresh and strong,  
 Against the Turneiment which is not long ;  
 When who so list to fight, may fight his fill ; 110  
 Till then your challenges ye may prolong ;  
 And then it shall be tried, if ye will,  
 Whether shall haue the Hag, or hold the Lady still.

They all agreed : so turning all to game,  
 And pleasaunt bord, they past forth on their way,  
 And all that while, where so they rode or came,  
 That masked Mock-knight was their sport and play. /  
 Till that at length vpon th'appointed day,  
 Vnto the place of turneyment they came ;  
 Where they before them found in fresh aray 120  
 Manie a braue knight, and manie a daintie dame  
 Assembled, for to get the honour of that game.

There this faire crewe arriuing, did diuide  
 Them selues afunder : *Blandamour* with those  
 Of his, on th'one ; the rest on th'other side.  
 But boastfull *Braggadocchio* rather chose,  
 For glorie vaine their fellowship to lose,  
 That men on him the more might gaze alone.  
 The rest them selues in troupes did else dispoise,  
 Like as it seemed best to euery one ; 130  
 The knights in couples marcht, with ladies linckt attone.

Then first of all forth came Sir *Satyrane*,  
 Bearing that precious relicke in an arke

l. 109, ; put for , : l. 110, ; for ,—accepted : l. 114, : for ,—accepted.



Of gold, that bad eyes might it not prophane :  
 Which drawing softly forth out of the darke,  
 He open shewd, that all men it mote marke.  
 A gorgeous girdle, curiously embost  
 With pearle & precious stone, worth many a marke ;  
 Yet did the workmanship farre passe the cost :  
 It was the same, which lately *Florimel* had lost. 140

That same aloft he hong in open vew,  
 To be the prize of beautie and of might ;  
 The which eftfoones discouered, to it drew  
 The eyes of all, allur'd with close delight,  
 And hearts quite robbed with so glorious fight,  
 That all men threw out vowes and wifhes vaine.  
 Thrife happie Ladie, and thrife happie knight,  
 Them seemd, that could so goodly riches gaine,  
 So worthie of the perill, worthy of the paine.

Then / tooke the bold Sir *Satyrane* in hand 150  
 An huge great speare, such as he wont to wield,  
 And vauncing forth from all the other band  
 Of knights, addrest his maiden-headed shield,  
 Shewing him selfe all ready for the field.  
 Gainst whom there singled from the other side  
 A Painim knight, that well in armes was skild,  
 And had in many a battell oft bene tride,  
 Hight *Bruncheval* the bold, who fierfly forth did ride.

So furiously they both together met,  
 That neither could the others force sustaine ; 160

l. 134, '*profane*': l. 148, , after '*seemd*'—accepted : l. 153, for '*maiden-headed*' Church suggested '*satyr-headed*.'

As two fierce Bulls, that striue the rule to get  
 Of all the heard, meete with so hideous maine,  
 That both rebutted, tumble on the plaine :  
 So these two champions to the ground were feld,  
 Where in a maze they both did long remaine,  
 And in their hands their idle troncheons held,  
 Which neither able were to wag, or once to weld.

Which when the noble *Ferramont* espide,  
 He pricked forth in ayd of *Satyras* ;  
 And him against Sir *Blandamour* did ride 170  
 With all the strength and stifnesse that he can.  
 But the more strong and stiffely that he ran,  
 So much more forely to the ground he fell,  
 That on an heape were tumbled horse and man.  
 Vnto whose rescue forth rode *Paridell* ;  
 But him likewise with that same speare he eke did  
 quell.

Which *Braggadocchio* seeing, had no will  
 To hasten greatly to his parties ayd,  
 Albee his turne were next ; but stood there still,  
 As one that seemed doubtfull or difmayd. / 180  
 But *Triamond* halfe wroth to see him staid,  
 Sternly stept forth, and raught away his speare,  
 With which so fore he *Ferramont* assaid,  
 That horse and man to ground he quite did beare,  
 That neither could in hast themselues againe vpreare.

Which to auenge, Sir *Deuon* him did dight,  
 But with no better fortune then the rest :  
 For him likewise he quickly downe did smight,  
 And after him Sir *Douglas* him addrest,

And after him Sir *Dabumord* forth preft, 190  
 But none of them againft his ftrokes could ftand,  
 But all the more, the more his praife increft.  
 For either they were left vppon the land,  
 Or went away fore wounded of his hapleffe hand.

And now by this, Sir *Satyrane* abraid,  
 Out of the fwowne, in which too long he lay;  
 And looking round about, like one difmaid,  
 Whereas he faw the mercileffe affray  
 Which doughty *Triamond* had wrought that day,  
 Vnto the noble Knights of Maidenhead, 200  
 His mighty heart did almoft rend in tway,  
 For very gall, that rather wholly dead  
 Himfelfe he wifht haue beene, then in fo bad a ftad.

Eftfoones he gan to gather vp around  
 His weapons, which lay scattered all abroad,  
 And as it fell, his fteed he ready found.  
 On whom remounting, fiercely forth he rode,  
 Like sparke of fire that from the anduile glode.  
 There where he faw the valiant *Triamond*  
 Chafing, and laying on them heauy lode, 210  
 That none his force were able to withftond,  
 So dreadfull were his ftrokes, fo deadly was his hond.

With / that, at him his beam-like fpeare he aimed,  
 And thereto all his power and might applide :

l. 190, '*Palimord*': l. 191, '*them*' for '*you*'—accepted: l. 192, '*in-creaft*'—in 1596 printed '*in creft*': l. 198, . removed: l. 200, , for period (.): l. 208, , for . (bad): l. 210, , for .—accepted: l. 213, , after '*that*'—accepted: *ib.*, misprinted in 1596 '*brauelike*'—'*beamlike*' accepted.

The wicked steele for mischief first ordained,  
And hauing now misfortune got for guide,  
Staid not, till it arriued in his fide.  
And therein made a very griesly wound,  
That streames of bloud his armour all bedide.  
Much was he daunted with that direfull stound, 220  
That scarfe he him vpheld from falling in a found.

Yet as he might, himfelfe he soft withdrew  
Out of the field, that none perceiu'd it plaine.  
Then gan the part of Chalers anew  
To range the field, and victorlike to raine,  
That none against them battell durst maintaine.  
By that the gloomy euening on them fell,  
That forced them from fighting to refraine,  
And trumpets found to cease did them compell.  
So *Satyrane* that day was iudg'd to beare the bell. 230

The morrow next the Turney gan anew,  
And with the first the hardy *Satyrane*  
Appear'd in place, with all his noble crew :  
On th'other fide, full many a warlike swaine,  
Assembled were, that glorious prize to gaine.  
But mongst them all, was not Sir *Triamond*,  
Vnable he new battell to darraine,  
Through grieuance of his late receiued wound,  
That doubly did him grieue, when so himfelfe he  
found.

Which *Cambell* seeing, though he could not salue, 240  
Ne done vndoe, yet for to salue his name,

l. 216, , for .—accepted : l. 221, '*fwound*': l. 223, period for ,—accepted,  
and so l. 229 : l. 233, : for ,—accepted.

And purchase honour in his friends behalve,  
 This goodly counterfesaunce he did frame. /  
 The shield and armes well knowne to be the fame,  
 Which *Triamond* had worne, vnwares to wight,  
 And to his friend vnwift, for doubt of blame,  
 If he misdid ; he on himfelfe did dight,  
 That none could him discerne, and so went forth to fight.

There *Satyrane* Lord of the field he found,  
 Triumphant in great ioy and iolity ; 250  
 Gainst whom none able was to stand on ground ;  
 That much he gan his glorie to enuy,  
 And cast t'auenge his friends indignity.  
 A mightie speare eftfoones at him he bent ;  
 Who seeing him come on so furiously,  
 Met him mid-way with equall hardiment,  
 That forcibly to ground they both together went.

They vp againe them felues can lightly reare,  
 And to their tryed swords them felues betake ; 259  
 With which they wrought such wondrous maruels  
 That all the rest it did amazed make, (there,  
 Ne any dar'd their perill to partake ;  
 Now cuffing close, now chacing to and fro,  
 Now hurtling round aduantage for to take ;  
 As two wild Boares together grappling go,  
 Chaufing and foming choler each against his fo.

So as they court, and turneyd here and theare,  
 It chaunst Sir *Satyrane* his steed at last,

l. 248, . for *nil*—accepted : l. 249, in '96 not brought out, as usual :  
 l. 263, 'cuffing' 1611.

Whether through foundring or through fodein feare  
To stumble, that his rider nigh he cast ; 270  
Which vauntage *Cambell* did pursue so fast,  
That ere him felfe he had recouered well,  
So fore he fowst him on the compast creast,  
That forced him to leaue his loftie fell,  
And rudely tumbling downe vnder his horfe feete fell.

Lightly / *Cambello* leapt downe from his steed,  
For to haue rent his shield and armes away,  
That whylome wont to be the victors meed ;  
When all vnwares he felt an hideous fway  
Of many swords, that lode on him did lay. 280  
An hundred knights had him enclosed round,  
To rescue *Satyrane* out of his pray ;  
All which at once huge strokes on him did pound,  
In hope to take him prisoner, where he stood on ground.

He with their multitude was nought dismayd,  
But with stout courage turnd vpon them all,  
And with his brondiron round about him layd ;  
Of which he dealt large almes, as did befall :  
Like as a Lion that by chaunce doth fall  
Into the hunters toile, doth rage and rore, 290  
In royall heart disdaining to be thrall.  
But all in vaine : for what might one do more ?  
They haue him taken captiue, though it grieue him fore.

Whereof when newes to *Triamond* was brought,  
There as he lay, his wound he soone forgot,  
And starting vp, streight for his armour fought :  
In vaine he fought ; for there he found it not ;

*Cambello* it away before had got :  
*Cambelloes* armes therefore he on him threw,  
 And lightly iffewd forth to take his lot. 300  
 There he in troupe found all that warlike crew,  
 Leading his friend away, full forie to his vew.

Into the thickeft of that knightly preaffe  
 He thruft, and smote downe all that was betweene,  
 Caried with feruent zeale ; ne did he ceaffe,  
 Till that he came, where he had *Cambell* feene, /  
 Like captiue thral two other Knights atweene,  
 There he amongft them cruell hauocke makes ;  
 That they which lead him, foone enforced beene  
 To let him loofe, to faue their proper stakes ; 310  
 Who being freed, from one a weapon fiercely takes.

With that he driues at them with dreadfull might,  
 Both in remembrance of his friends late harme,  
 And in reuengement of his owne defpight,  
 So both together giue a new allarme,  
 As if but now the battell waxed warme.  
 As when two greedy Wolues doe breake by force  
 Into an heard, farre from the husband farme,  
 They spoile and rauine without all remorfe ;  
 So did thefe two through all the field their foes enforce.

Fiercely they followd on their bolde emprize, 321  
 Till trumpets found did warne them all to reft ;  
 Then all with one confent did yeeld the prize  
 To *Triamond* and *Cambell* as the beft.

l. 305, : for ,—accepted : l. 308, ; for .—accepted : l. 310, ; put for ,  
 and : of 1609 : l. 319, ; for ,—accepted.

But *Triamond* to *Cambell* it releft,  
 And *Cambell* it to *Triamond* transferd ;  
 Each labouring t'aduanche the others gef,  
 And make his praife before his owne preferd :  
 So that the doome was to another day differd.

The laft day came, when all thofe knightes againe 330  
 Affembled were their deedes of armes to fhew.  
 Full many deedes that day were fhewed plaine :  
 But *Satyrane* boue all the other crew,  
 His wondrous worth declared in all mens view.  
 For from the firft he to the laft endured,  
 And though fome while Fortune from him withdrew,  
 Yet euermore his honour he recured,  
 And with vnwearied powre his party ftill affured.

Ne / was there Knight that euer thought of armes,  
 But that his vtmoft prowefle there made knownen, 340  
 That by their many wounds, and carelefle harmes,  
 By fhüered fpeares, and fwords all vnder ftrowen,  
 By fcattered fhields was eafie to be fhown.  
 There might ye fee loofe fteeds at randon ronne,  
 Whofe luckeleffe riders late were ouerthrowen ;  
 And fquiers make haft to helpe their Lords fordonne.  
 But ftill the Knights of Maidenhead the better wonne.

Till that there entred on the other fide,  
 A ftraunger knight, from whence no man could reed,  
 In quyent difguife, full hard to be defcride. 350  
 For all his armour was like faluage weed,  
 With woody moffe bedight, and all his fteed



With oaken leaues attrapt, that seemed fit  
 For saluage wight, and thereto well agreed  
 His word, which on his ragged shield was writ,  
*Saluageſſe ſans fineſſe*, ſhewing ſecret wit.

He at his firſt incomming, charg'd his ſpere  
 At him, that firſt appeared in his fight :  
 That was to weet, the ſtout Sir *Sangliere*,  
 Who well was knowne to be a valiant Knight, 360  
 Approued oft in many a perlous fight.  
 Him at the firſt encounter downe he ſmote,  
 And ouerbore beyond his crouper quight,  
 And after him another Knight, that hote  
 Sir *Brianor*, ſo fore, that none him life behote.

Then ere his hand he reard, he ouerthrew  
 Seuen Knights, one after other as they came :  
 And when his ſpeare was bruſt, his ſword he drew,  
 The inſtrument of wrath, and with the ſame /  
 Far'd like a lyon in his bloodie game, 370  
 Hewing, and flaſhing ſhields, and helmets bright,  
 And beating downe what euer nigh him came,  
 That euery one gan ſhun his dreadfull fight,  
 No leſſe then death it ſelfe, in daungerous affright.

Much wondred all men, what, or whence he came,  
 That did amongſt the troupes ſo tyrannize ;  
 And each of other gan inquire his name.  
 But when they could not learne it by no wiſe,  
 Moſt anſwerable to his wyld diſguize

l. 367, , after '*Knights*'—accepted : l. 372, , removed after '*downe*'—accepted.

It seemed, him to terme the saluage knight. 380  
But certes his right name was otherwize,  
Though knowne to few, that *Arthegall* he hight,  
The doughtiest knight that liv'd that day, and most of  
might.

Thus was Sir *Satyrane* with all his band  
By his sole manhood and atchieuement stout  
Dismayd, that none of them in field durst stand,  
But beaten were, and chafed all about.  
So he continued all that day throughout,  
Till euening, that the Sunne gan downward bend.  
Then rushed forth out of the thickest rout 390  
A stranger knight, that did his glorie shend :  
So nought may be esteemed happie till the end.

He at his entrance charg'd his powrefull speare  
At *Artegall*, in middest of his pryde,  
And therewith smote him on his Vmbriere  
So fore, that tombling backe, he downe did flyde  
Ouer his horses taile aboue a stryde :  
Whence litle lust he had to rise againe.  
Which *Cambell* seeing, much the same enuyde,  
And ran at him with all his might and maine ; 400  
But shortly was likewise seene lying on the plaine.

Whereas full inly wroth was *Triamond*,  
And cast t'euenge the shame doen to his freend :  
But by his friend himselfe eke soone he fond,  
In no lesse neede of helpe, then him he weend.  
All which when *Blandamour* from end to end  
Beheld, he woxe therewith displeased fore,  
And thought in mind it shortly to amend :

His speare he feutred, and at him it bore ;  
But with no better fortune, then the rest afore. 41=

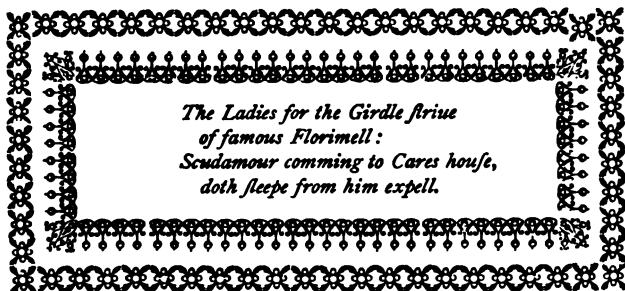
Full many others at him likewise ran :  
But all of them likewise dismounted were.  
Ne certes wonder ; for no powre of man  
Could bide the force of that enchaunted speare,  
The which this famous *Britomart* did beare ;  
With which she wondrous deeds of arms atchieued,  
And ouerthrew, what euer came her neare,  
That all those stranger knights full fore agrieued,  
And that late weaker band of chalengers relieued.

Like as in fommers day when raging heat 42○  
Doth burne the earth, and boyled riuers drie,  
That all brute beasts forst to refraine fro meat,  
Doe hunt for shade, where shrowded they may lie,  
And missing it, faine from themselues to flie ;  
All trauellers tormented are with paine :  
A watry cloud doth ouercast the skie,  
And poureth forth a sudden shoure of raine,  
That all the wretched world recomforteth againe.

So did the warlike *Britomart* restore  
The prize, to knights of Maydenhead that day, 430  
Which else was like to haue bene lost, and bore  
The prayse of prowesse from them all away. /  
Then shrilling trumpets loudly gan to bray,  
And bad them leaue their labours and long toyle,  
To ioyous feast and other gentle play ;  
Where beauties prize shold win that pretious spoyle :  
Where I with sound of trompe will also resta whyle.

l. 412, . for ,—accepted : l. 431, 'Which . . . lost' in ( ) : l. 435, for ,—accepted.

## Cant. V.



**I**T hath bene through all ages euer seene,  
 That with the praise of armes and cheualrie,  
 The prize of beautie still hath ioyned beene;  
 And that for reasons speciall priuitie:  
 For either doth on other much relie. 10  
 For he me seemes most fit the faire to serue,  
 That can her best defend from villenie;  
 And she most fit his seruice doth deferue,  
 That fairest is and from her faith will neuer fwerue.

So fitly now here commeth next in place,  
 After the prooffe of prowesse ended well,  
 The controuerfe of beauties foueraine grace;  
 In which to her that doth the most excell,  
 Shall fall the girdle of faire *Florimell*:  
 That many wish to win for glorie vaine, 20  
 And not for vertuous vse, which some doe tell  
 That glorious belt did in it selfe containe,  
 Which Ladies ought to loue, and seeke for to obtaine.

That / girdle gaue the vertue of chafte loue,  
 And wiuehood true, to all that did it beare ;  
 But whofoeuer contrarie doth proue,  
 Might not the same about her middle weare.  
 But it would loofe, or elfe a funder teare.  
 Whilome it was (as Faeries wont report)  
 Dame *Venus* girdle, by her steemed deare, 30  
 What time ſhe vfd to liue in wiuely fort ;  
 But layd afide, when ſo ſhe vfd her loofer ſport.

Her husband *Vulcan* whylome for her ſake,  
 When firſt he loued her with heart entire,  
 This pretious ornament they ſay did make,  
 And wrought in *Lemno* with vnquenched fire :  
 And afterwards did for her loues firſt hire,  
 Giue it to her, for euer to remaine,  
 Therewith to bind laſciuious deſire,  
 And loofe affections ſtreightly to reſtraine ; 40  
 Which vertue it for euer after did retaine.

The ſame one day, when ſhe her ſelfe diſpoſd  
 To viſite her beloued Paramoure,  
 The God of warre, ſhe from her middle loofd,  
 And left behind her in her ſecret bowre,  
 On *Acidalian* mount, where many an howre  
 She with the pleaſant *Graces* wont to play.  
 There *Florimell* in her firſt ages flowre  
 Was foſtered by thoſe *Graces*, (as they ſay)  
 And brought with her frō thence that goodly belt  
 away.

l. 36, '*Lemnos*' 1611 : l. 46, misprinted '*Aridalian*' in 1609.

That goodly belt was *Cestus* hight by name, 51  
 And as her life by her esteemed deare.  
 No wonder then, if that to winne the same  
 So many Ladies fought, as shall appeare ;/  
 For pearelesse she was thought, that did it beare.  
 And now by this their feast all being ended,  
 The iudges which thereto selected were,  
 Into the Martian field adowne descended,  
 To deeme this doutfull case, for which they all  
 cōtended.

But first was question made, which of those Knights 60  
 That lately turneyd, had the wager wonne :  
 There was it iudged by those worthie wights,  
 That *Satyrane* the first day best had donne :  
 For he last ended, hauing first begonne.  
 The second was to *Triamond* behight,  
 For that he sau'd the victour from fordonne :  
 For *Cambell* victour was in all mens fight,  
 Till by mishap he in his foemens hand did light.

The third dayes prize vnto that straunger Knight, 69  
 Whom all men term'd Knight of the Hebene speare,  
 To *Britomart* was giuen by good right ;  
 For that with puissant stroke she downe did beare  
 The *Saluage* Knight, that victour was whileare,  
 And all the rest, which had the best afore,  
 And to the last vnconquer'd did appeare ;  
 For last is deemed best. To her therefore  
 The fayrest Ladie was adiudgd for Paramore.

l. 55, '*peerlesse*' : l. 58, '*Martian*'—qy. '*martial*' ? as Dr. Morris queries.

But thereat greatly grudged *Arthegall*,  
 And much repynd, that both of victors meede,  
 And eke of honour she did him forestall.  
 Yet mote he not withstand, what was decreede ;  
 But inly thought of that despightfull deede  
 Fit time t'awaite auenged for to bee.  
 This being ended thus, and all agreed,  
 Then next ensue'd the Paragon to see  
 Of beauties praise, and yeeld the fayrest her due fee.

Then / first *Cambello* brought vnto their view  
 His faire *Cambina*, couered with a veale ;  
 Which being once withdrawne, most perfect hew  
 And passing beautie did eftsoones reueale,  
 That able was weake harts away to steale.  
 Next did Sir *Triamond* vnto their sight  
 The face of his deare *Canacee* vnheale ;  
 Whose beauties beame eftsoones did shine so bright  
 That daz'd the eyes of all, as with exceeding light.

And after her did *Paridell* produce  
 His false *Dueffa*, that she might be seene ;  
 Who with her forged beautie did seduce  
 The hearts of some, that fairest her did weene ;  
 As diuerse wits affected diuers beene.  
 Then did Sir *Ferramont* vnto them shew  
 His *Lucida*, that was full faire and sheene,  
 And after these an hundred Ladies moe  
 Appear'd in place, the which each other did outgoe.

All which who so dare thinke for to enchace,  
 Him needeth fure a golden pen I weene,

l. 79, 'repyn'd': l. 83, , for .: l. 97, ; for ,—accepted: l. 105, 'who-f

To tell the feature of each goodly face.  
 For since the day that they created beene,  
 So many heauenly faces were not seene  
 Asssembled in one place : ne he that thought 110  
 For *Chian* folke to pourtraict beauties Queene,  
 By view of all the fairest to him brought,  
 So many faire did see, as here he might haue fought.

At last the most redoubted *Britoneffe*,  
 Her louely *Amoret* did open shew ;  
 Whose face discouered, plainly did expresse  
 The heauenly pourtraict of bright Angels hew. /  
 Well weened all, which her that time did vew,  
 That she should surely beare the bell away,  
 Till *Blandamour*, who thought he had the trew 120  
 And very *Florimell*, did her display :  
 The fight of whom once seene did all the rest difmay.


For all afore that seemed fayre and bright,  
 Now base and contemptible did appeare,  
 Compar'd to her, that shone as Phebes light,  
 Amongst the lesser starres in euening cleare.  
 All that her saw, with wonder rauisht weare,  
 And weend no mortall creature she should bee,  
 But some celestiall shape, that flesh did beare :  
 Yet all were glad there *Florimell* to see ; 130  
 Yet thought that *Florimell* was not so faire as shee.


As guilefull Goldsmith that by secret skill,  
 With golden foyle doth finely ouer spred  
 Some baser metall, which commend he will  
 Vnto the vulgar for good gold insted,

l. 125, '*Phæbe's*' : l. 127, , after '*saw*'—accepted.



He much more goodly glosse thereon doth shed,  
 To hide his falshood, then if it were trew :  
 So hard, this Idole was to be ared,  
 That *Florimell* her selfe in all mens vew  
 She seem'd to passe : so forged things do fairest shew.

Then was that golden belt by doome of all I   
 Graunted to her, as to the fayrest Dame.  
 Which being brought, about her middle small  
 They thought to gird, as best it her became ;  
 But by no meanes they could it thereto frame.  
 For euer as they fastned it, it loof'd  
 And fell away, as feeling secret blame.  
 Full oft about her waist she it enclof'd ;  
 And it as oft was from about her waist disclof'd.

That / all men wondred at the vncouth sight, I   
 And each one thought, as to their fancies came.  
 But she her selfe did thinke it doen for spight,  
 And touched was with secret wrath and shame  
 Therewith, as thing deuiz'd her to defame.  
 Then many other Ladies likewise tride,  
 About their tender loynes to knit the same ;  
 But it would not on none of them abide,  
 But when they thought it fast, eftsoones it was  
 vntide.

Which when that scornfull *Squire of Dames* did vew,  
 He lowdly gan to laugh, and thus to iest ; 160  
 Alas for pittie that so faire a crew,  
 As like can not be seene from East to West,



Cannot find one this girdle to inuest.  
 Fie on the man, that did it first inuent,  
 To shame vs all with this, *Vngirt vnblest*.  
 Let neuer Ladie to his loue assent,  
 That hath this day so many so vnmanly shent.

Thereat all Knights gan laugh, and Ladies lowre :  
 Till that at last the gentle *Amoret*  
 Likewise assayd, to proue that girdles powre ; 170  
 And hauing it about her middle set,  
 Did find it fit, withouten breach or let.  
 Whereat the rest gan greatly to enuie :  
 But *Florimell* exceedingly did fret,  
 And snatching from her hand halfe angrily  
 The belt againe, about her bodie gan it tie.

Yet nathemore would it her bodie fit ;  
 Yet nathelesse to her, as her dew right,  
 It yeelded was by them, that iudged it :  
 And she her selfe adiudged to the Knight, / 180  
 That bore the Hebene speare, as wonne in fight.  
 But *Britomart* would not thereto assent,  
 Ne her owne *Amoret* forgoe so light  
 For that strange Dame, whose beauties wonderment  
 She lesse esteem'd, then th'others vertuous gouernment.

Whom when the rest did see her to refuse,  
 They were full glad, in hope themselues to get her :  
 Yet at her choice they all did greatly muse.  
 But after that the Iudges did arret her  
 Vnto the second best, that lou'd her better ; 190  
 That was the *Saluage* Knight : but he was gone  
 In great displeasure, that he could not get her.

Then was she iudged *Triamond* his one ;  
But *Triamond* lou'd *Canacee*, and other none.

Tho vnto *Satryan* she was adiudged,  
Who was right glad to gaine so goodly meed :  
But *Blandamour* thereat full greatly grudged,  
And litle pray'd his labours euill speed,  
That for to winne the faddle, lost the steed.  
Ne lesse thereat did *Paridell* complaine, 20   
And thought t'appaele from that, which was decreed ,  
To fingle combat with Sir *Satyrane*.  
Thereto him *Ate* stird, new discord to maintaine.

And eke with these, full many other Knights  
She through her wicked working did incense,  
Her to demaund, and chalenge as their rights,  
Deferued for their perils recompense.  
Amongst the rest with boastfull vaine pretense  
Stept *Braggadochio* forth, and as his thrall  
Her claym'd, by him in battell wonne long sens: 21 0  
Whereto her selfe he did to witnesse call ;  
Who being askt, accordingly confessed all.

Thereat / exceeding wroth was *Satryan* ;  
And wroth with *Satryan* was *Blandamour* ;  
And wroth with *Blandamour* was *Eriuan* ;  
And at them both Sir *Paridell* did loure.  
So all together stird vp strifull stoure,  
And readie were new battell to darraigne.  
Each one profest to be her paramoure,  
And vow'd with speare and shield it to maintaine; 220  
Ne Iudges powre, ne reasons rule mote them refraine.

l. 193, 'one'—sic. Hughes reads 'own': l. 210, 'since' (bad).

Which troublous stirre when *Satyrane* auiz'd :  
He gan to cast how to appease the fame,  
And to accord them all, this meanes deuiz'd :  
First in the midst to set that fayrest Dame,  
To whom each one his chalenge should disclame,  
And he himselfe his right would eke releasse :  
Then looke to whom she voluntarie came,  
He should without disturbance her possesse :  
Sweete is the loue that comes alone with willingnesse. 230

They all agreed, and then that snowy Mayd  
Was in the middest plact among them all ;  
All on her gazing wisht, and vowd, and prayd,  
And to the Queene of beautie clofe did call,  
That she vnto their portion might befall.  
Then when she long had lookt vpon each one,  
As though she wishted to haue pleasd them all,  
At last to *Braggadocchio* selfe alone  
She came of her accord, in spight of all his fone.

Which when they all beheld they chaft and rag'd, 240  
And woxe nigh mad for very harts despight,  
That from reuenge their willes they scarce affwag'd :  
Some thought from him her to haue reft by might ;/  
Some proffer made with him for her to fight.  
But he nought car'd for all that they could say :  
For he their words as wind esteemed light.  
Yet not fit place he thought it there to stay,  
But secretly from thence that night her bore away.

They which remaynd, so soone as they perceiu'd,  
That she was gone, departed thence with speed, 250

l. 226, 'one'—accepted for 'once' of '96.

And follow'd them, in mind her to haue reau'd  
 From wight vnworthie of so noble meed.  
 In which ~~p~~ourfuit how each one did succeede,  
 Shall else be told in order, as it fell.  
 But now of *Britomart* it here doth neede,  
 The hard aduentures and strange haps to tell ;  
 Since with the rest she went not after *Florimell*.

For soone as she them saw to discord set,  
 Her list no longer in that place abide ;  
 But taking with her louely *Amoret*, 260  
 Vpon her first aduenture forth did ride,  
 To seeke her lou'd, making blind Loue her guide.  
 Vnluckie Mayd to seeke her enemye !  
 Vnluckie Mayd to seeke him farre and wide,  
 Whom, when he was vnto her selfe most nie,  
 She through his late disguizemēt could him not descrie.

So much the more her grieve, the more her toyle :  
 Yet neither toyle nor grieve she once did spare,  
 In seeking him, that should her paine assoyle ;  
 Whereto great comfort in her sad misfare 270  
 Was *Amoret*, companion of her care :  
 Who likewise sought her louer long miswent,  
 The gentle *Scudamour*, whose hart whileare  
 That stryfull hag with gealous discontent  
 Had fild, that he to fell reueng was fully bent.

Bent / to reuenge on blamelesse *Britomart*  
 The crime, which curst *Atē* kindled earst,

l. 262, cap. 'L'—accepted : l. 263, ! for ,—accepted : l. 274, 'stryffe-  
 full' : l. 275, ; for (.) period.

The which like thornes did pricke his gealous hart,  
 And through his foule like poyfnd arrow perft,  
 That by no reafon it might be reuerft, 280  
 For ought that *Glauce* could or doe or fay.  
 For aye the more that ſhe the ſame reherft,  
 The more it gauld, and grieu'd him night and day,  
 That nought but dire reuenge his anger mote defray.

So as they trauelled, the drouping night  
 Couered with cloudie ſtorme and bitter ſhowre,  
 That dreadfull ſeem'd to euery liuing wight,  
 Vpon them fell, before her timely howre ;  
 That forced them to ſeeke ſome couert bowre,  
 Where they might hide their heads in quiet reft, 290  
 And ſhrowd their perfons from that ſtormie ſtowre.  
 Not farre away, not meete for any gueſt  
 They ſpide a little cottage, like ſome poore mans neſt.

Vnder a ſteepe hilles ſide it placed was,  
 There where the mouldred earth had cav'd the banke;  
 And faſt befide a little brooke did pas  
 Of muddie water, that like puddle ſtanke ;  
 By which few crooked fallowes grew in ranke :  
 Whereto approaching nigh, they heard the ſound  
 Of many yron hammers beating ranke, 300  
 And anſwering their wearie turnes around,  
 That ſeemed ſome blackſmith dwelt in that deſert  
 ground.

There entring in, they found the goodman ſelfe,  
 Full buſily vnto his worke ybent ;

l. 278, 'his' for 'her' of '96 : l. 279, 'pearc't' : l. 297, ; for ,—accepted.

Who was to weete a wretched wearifh elfe,  
 With hollow eyes and rawbone cheekes forfpent, /  
 As if he had in prifon long bene pent:  
 Full blacke and grievedly did his face appeare,  
 Befmeard with fmoke that nigh his eye-fight blent ;  
 With rugged beard, and hoarie fhagged heare, 310  
 The which he neuer wont to combe, or comely fheare.

Rude was his garment, and to rags all rent,  
 Ne better had he, ne for better cared :  
 With bliftred hands emongft the cinders brent,  
 And fingers filthie, with long nayles vnpared,  
 Right fit to rend the food, on which he fared.  
 His name was *Care* ; a blackfmith by his trade,  
 That neither day nor night, from working fpared,  
 But to fmall purpofe yron wedges made ; 319  
 Thofe be vnquiet thoughts, that carefull minds inuade.

In which his worke he had fixe feruants preft,  
 About the Andvile ftanding euermore,  
 With huge great hammers, that did neuer reft  
 From heaping ftroakes, which thereon foufed fore :  
 All fixe ftiong groomes, but one then other more :  
 For by degrees they all were difagreed ;  
 So likewise did the hammers which they bore,  
 Like belles in greatneffe orderly fucceed,  
 That he which was the laft, the firft did farre exceede.

He like a monftrous Gyant feem'd in fight, 330  
 Farre paffing *Bronteus*, or *Pynacmon* great,  
 The which in *Lipari* doe day and night  
 Frame thunderbolts for *Ioues* auengefull threate.

l. 315, 'prepared': 1611 (bad): l. 325, , after 'fixe': l. 331, 'Pynacmon.'

So dreadfully he did the anduile beat,  
 That seem'd to duft he shortly would it driue :  
 So huge his hammer and so fierce his heat,  
 That seem'd a rocke of Diamond it could riue,  
 And rend a funder quite, if he thereto lift striue.

Sir / *Scudamour* there entring, much admired  
 The manner of their worke and wearie paine ; 340  
 And hauing long beheld, at last enquired  
 The cause and end thereof : but all in vaine ;  
 For they for nought would from their worke refraine,  
 Ne let his speeches come vnto their eare.  
 And eke the breathfull bellows blew amaine,  
 Like to the Northren winde, that none could heare :  
 Those *Penfifeneffe* did moue; & *Sighes* the bellows  
 weare.

Which when that warriour saw, he said no more,  
 But in his armour layd him downe to rest :  
 To rest he layd him downe vpon the flore, 350  
 (Whylome for ventrous Knights the bedding best)  
 And thought his wearie limbs to haue redrest.  
 And that old aged Dame, his faithfull Squire,  
 Her feeble ioynts layd eke a downe to rest ;  
 That needed much her weake age to desire,  
 After so long a trauell, which them both did tire.

There lay Sir *Scudamour* long while expecting,  
 When gentle sleepe his heauie eyes would close ;  
 Oft chaunging fides, and oft new place electing,  
 Where better seem'd he mote himselfe repose ; 360

l. 338, '*afunder*' : l. 346, : for ,—accepted.



And oft in wrath he thence againe vprose ;  
 And oft in wrath he layd him downe againe.  
 But wherefoeuer he did himselfe dispose,  
 He by no meanes could wished ease obtaine :  
 So euery place seem'd painefull, and ech changing vaine==.

And euermore, when he to sleepe did thinke,  
 The hammers found his senses did molest ;  
 And euermore, when he began to winke,  
 The bellows noyse disturb'd his quiet rest, /  
 Ne suffred sleepe to settle in his brest. 37—0  
 And all the night the dogs did barke and howle  
 About the house, at sent of stranger guest :  
 And now the crowing Cocke, and now the Owle  
 Lowde shriking him afflicted to the very fowle.

And if by fortune any little nap  
 Vpon his heaue eye-lids chaunst to fall,  
 Eftsoones one of those villeins him did rap  
 Vpon his headpeece with his yron mall ;  
 That he was soone awaked therewithall,  
 And lightly started vp as one affrayd ; 38 ◁  
 Or as if one him suddenly did call.

So oftentimes he out of sleepe abrayd,  
 And then lay musing long, on that him ill apayd.

So long he mused, and so long he lay,  
 That at the last his wearie sprite opprest  
 With fleshly weaknesse, which no creature may  
 Long time resist, gaue place to kindly rest,  
 That all his senses did full soone arrest :  
 Yet in his soundest sleepe, his dayly feare  
 His ydle braine gan busily molest, 390

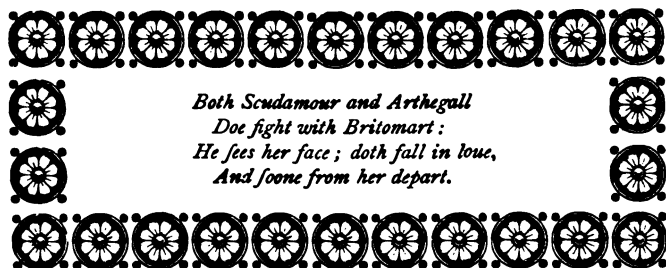
And made him dreame thofe two difloyall were :  
The thing that day moft minds, at night doe moft appeare.

With that, the wicked carle the maifter Smith  
A paire of redwhot yron tongs did take  
Out of the burning cinders, and therewith  
Vnder his fide him nipt, that forft to wake,  
He felt his hart for very paine to quake,  
And started vp auenged for to be  
On him, the which his quiet flomber brake :  
Yet looking round about him none could fee ; 400  
Yet did the fmart remaine, though he himfelfe did flee.

In / fuch difquiet and hartfretting payne,  
He all that night, that too long night did paffe.  
And now the day out of the Ocean mayne  
Began to peepe aboue this earthly mafse,  
With pearly dew fprinkling the morning graffe :  
Then vp he rofe like heauie lumpe of lead,  
That in his face, as in a looking glaffe,  
The fignes of anguifh one mote plainly read,  
And gheffe the man to be difmayd with gealous dread.

Vnto his lofty fteede he clombe anone, 410  
And forth vpon his former voiage fared,  
And with him eke that aged Squire attone ;  
Who whatfoeuer perill was prepared,  
Both equall paines and equall perill fhared :  
The end whereof and daungerous euent  
Shall for another canticle be fpared.  
But here my wearie teeme nigh ouer fpent  
Shall breath it felfe a while, after fo long a went. /

## Cant. VI.



**V**V Hat equall torment to the grieve of mind,  
 And pyning anguish hid in gentle hart,  
 That inly feeds it selfe with thoughts vnkind,  
 And nourisheth her owne consuming smart ?  
 What medicine can any Leaches art 10  
 Yeeld such a fore, that doth her grievance hide,  
 And will to none her maladie impart ?  
 Such was the wound that *Scudamour* did gride ;  
 For which *Dan Phebus* selfe cannot a salve prouide.

Who hauing left that restlesse house of *Care*,  
 The next day, as he on his way did ride,  
 Full of melancholie and sad misfare,  
 Through misconcept ; all vnawares espide  
 An armed Knight vnder a forrest side, 20  
 Sitting in shade beside his grazing steede ;  
 Who soone as them approaching he descride,

l. 3, : for,—accepted.

Gan towards them to pricke with eger speede,  
That seem'd he was full bent to some mischieuous deede.

Which *Scudamour* perceiuing, forth issewed  
To haue rencountred him in equall race ;  
But soone as th'other nigh approaching, vewed  
The armes he bore, his speare he gan abase,  
And / voide his course : at which so suddain case  
He wondred much. But th'other thus can say ;  
Ah gentle *Scudamour*, vnto your grace 30  
I me submit, and you of pardon pray,  
That almost had against you trespassed this day.

Whereto thus *Scudamour*, Small harme it were  
For any knight, vpon a ventrous knight  
Without displeafance for to proue his spere.  
But reade you Sir, fith ye my name haue hight,  
What is your owne, that I mote you requite ?  
Certes (sayd he) ye mote as now excuse  
Me from discouering you my name aright :  
For time yet serues that I the same refuse, 40  
But call ye me the *Saluage Knight*, as others vse.

Then this, Sir *Saluage Knight* (quoth he) arcede ;  
Or doe you here within this forrest wonne,  
That seemeth well to answere to your weede ?  
Or haue ye it for some occasion donne ?  
That rather seemes, fith knowen armes ye shonne.  
This other day (sayd he) a stranger knight  
Shame and dishonour hath vnto me donne ;

l. 25, 'r'encountred' : l. 27, . for , (bad) : l. 37, ? for , but I place after  
'requite,' not after 'owne' : l. 44 within ( ).

On whom I waite to wreake that foule despight,  
When euer he this way shall passe by day or night. 50

Shame be his meede (quoth he) that meaneth shame.  
But what is he, by whom ye shamed were ?  
A stranger knight, sayd he, vnknowne by name,  
But knowne by fame, and by an Hebene speare,  
With which he all that met him, downe did beare.  
He in an open Turney lately held,  
Fro me the honour of that game did reare ;  
And hauing me all wearie earst, downe feld,  
The fayrest Ladie reft, and euer since withheld. /

When *Scudamour* heard mention of that speare, 60  
He wist right well, that it was *Britomart*,  
The which from him his fairest loue did beare.  
Tho gan he swell in euery inner part,  
For fell despight, and gnaw his gealous hart,  
That thus he sharply sayd ; Now by my head,  
Yet is not this the first vnknightly part,  
Which that same knight, whom by his launce I read,  
Hath doen to noble knights, that many makes him  
dread.

For lately he my loue hath fro me reft,  
And eke defiled with foule villanie 70  
The sacred pledge, which in his faith was left,  
In shame of knighthood and fidelitie ;  
The which ere long full deare he shall abie.  
And if to that auenge by you decreed  
This hand may helpe, or succour ought supplie,  
It shall not fayle, when so ye shall it need.  
So both to wreake their wrathes on *Britomart* agreed.

Whiles thus they communed, lo farre away  
 A Knight soft ryding towards them they spyde,  
 Attyr'd in forraine armes and straunge aray : 80  
 Whō when they nigh approcht, they plaine descryde  
 To be the fame, for whom they did abyde.  
 Sayd then Sir *Scudamour*, Sir *Saluage* knight  
 Let me this craue, sith first I was defyde,  
 That first I may that wrong to him requite :  
 And if I hap to fayle, you shall recure my right.

Which being yeelded, he his threatfull speare  
 Gan fewer, and against her fiercely ran.  
 Who soone as she him saw approaching neare  
 With so fell rage, her selfe she lightly gan 90  
 To / dight, to welcome him, well as she can :  
 But entertaind him in so rude a wise,  
 That to the ground she smote both horse and man ;  
 Whence neither greatly hasted to arise,  
 But on their common harmes together did deuise.

But *Artegall* beholding his mischaunce,  
 New matter added to his former fire ;  
 And est auentring his steeleheaded launce,  
 Against her rode, full of despiteous ire,  
 That nought but spoyle and vengeance did require.  
 But to himselfe his felonous intent 101  
 Returning, disappointed his desire,  
 Whiles vnawares his saddle he forwent,  
 And found himselfe on ground in great amazement.

Lightly he started vp out of that ffound,  
 And snatching forth his direfull deadly blade,

Did leape to her, as doth an eger hound  
 Thrust to an Hynd within some couert glade,  
 Whom without perill he cannot inuade.  
 With such fell greedines he her assayled, 110  
 That though she mounted were, yet he her made  
 To giue him ground, (so much his force preuayled)  
 And shun his mightie strokes, gainst which no armes  
 auayled.

So as they coursed here and there, it chaunst  
 That in her wheeling round, behind her crest  
 So forely he her strooke, that thence it glaunst  
 Adowne her backe, the which it fairely blest  
 From foule mischance ; ne did it euer rest,  
 Till on her hofes hinder parts it fell ;  
 Where byting deepe, so deadly it imprest, 120  
 That quite it chynd his backe behind the fell,  
 And to alight on foote her algates did compell. /

Like as the lightning brond from riuen skie,  
 Throwne out by angry *Ioue* in his vengeance,  
 With dreadfull force falles on some steeple hie ;  
 Which battring, downe it on the church doth glance,  
 And teares it all with terrible mischance.  
 Yet she no whit difmayd, her steed forfooke,  
 And casting from her that enchaunted lance,  
 Vnto her sword and shield her soone betooke; 130  
 And therewithall at him right furiously she strooke.

So furiously she strooke in her first heat,  
 Whiles with long fight on foot he breathlesse was,  
 That she him forced backward to retreat,  
 And yeeld vnto her weapon way to pas :

Whose raging rigour neither steele nor bras  
 Could stay, but to the tender flesh it went,  
 And pour'd the purple bloud forth on the gras ;  
 That all his mayle yriv'd, and plates yrent,  
 Shew'd all his bodie bare vnto the cruell dent. 140

At length when as he saw her hastie heat  
 Abate, and panting breath begin to fayle,  
 He through long sufferance growing now more great,  
 Rose in his strength, and gan her fresh assayle,  
 Heaping huge strokes, as thicke as showre of hayle,  
 And lashing dreadfully at euery part,  
 As if he thought her soule to disentraine.  
 Ah cruell hand, and thrise more cruell hart, (art.  
 That workt such wrecke on her, to whom thou dearest

What yron courage euer could endure, 150  
 To worke such outrage on so faire a creature ?  
 And in his madnesse thinke with hands impure  
 To spoyle so goodly workmanship of nature,  
 The / maker selfe resembling in her feature ?  
 Certes some hellish furie, or some feend  
 This mischief framd, for their first loues defeature,  
 To bath their hands in bloud of dearest freend,  
 Thereby to make their loues beginning, their liues end.

Thus long they trac'd, and trauerst to and fro,  
 Sometimes purfewing, and sometimes purfewed, 160  
 Still as aduantage they espyde thereto :  
 But toward th'end Sir *Arthegall* renewed  
 His strength still more, but she still more decrewed.  
 At last his lucklesse hand he heau'd on hie,  
 Hauing his forces all in one accrewed,



And therewith stroke at her so hideoullie,  
That seemed nought but death mote be her destinie.

The wicked stroke vpon her helmet chaunft,  
And with the force, which in it selfe it bore,  
Her ventayle shard away, and thence forth glaunft  
A downe in vaine, ne harm'd her any more. 170  
With that her angels face, vnseene afore,  
Like to the ruddie morne appeard in fight,  
Deawed with siluer drops, through sweating fore ;  
But somewhat redder, then befeem'd aright,  
Through toylesome heate and labour of her weary fight.

And round about the fame, her yellow heare  
Hauing through stirring loofd their wonted band,  
Like to a golden border did appeare,  
Framed in goldsmithes forge with cunning hand: 180  
Yet goldsmithes cunning could not vnderstand  
To frame such subtile wire, so shinie cleare.  
For it did glister like the golden sand,  
The which *Paſſolus* with his waters there,  
Throwes forth vpon the riuage round about him nere. /

And as his hand he vp againe did reare,  
Thinking to worke on her his vtmost wracke,  
His powrelesse arme benumbd with secret feare  
From his reuengefull purpose shronke abacke,  
And cruell sword out of his fingers slacke 190  
Fell downe to ground, as if the steele had fence,  
And felt some ruth, or fence his hand did lacke,  
Or both of them did thinke, obedience  
To doe to so diuine a beauties excellence.

l. 172, (*vnseene afore*) : l. 174, ; for ,—accepted : l. 189, '*shrunke*.'

And he himfelfe long gazing thereupon,  
At laft fell humbly downe vpon his knee,  
And of his wonder made religion,  
Weening fome heauenly goddeffe he did fee,  
Or elfe vnweeting, what it elfe might bee ;  
And pardon her befought his errour frayle, 200  
That had done outrage in fo high degree :  
Whileft trembling horror did his fenfe affayle,  
And made ech member quake, and manly hart to quayle.

Natheleffe ſhe full of wrath for that late ſtroke,  
All that long while vpheld her wrathfull hand,  
With fell intent, on him to bene ywroke,  
And looking ſterne, ſtill ouer him did ſtand,  
Threatning to ſtrike, vnleffe he would withſtand :  
And bad him riſe, or ſurely he ſhould die,  
But die or liue, for nought he would vpſtand 210  
But her of pardon prayd more earneſtlie,  
Or wreake on him her will for ſo great iniurie.

Which when as *Scudamour*, who now abrayd,  
Beheld, whereas he ſtood not farre afide,  
He was therewith right wondrously difmayd,  
And drawing nigh, when as he plaine deſcride  
That / peereleſſe paterne of Dame natures pride,  
And heauenly image of perfection,  
He bleſt himfelfe, as one fore terrifide,  
And turning his feare to faint deuotion, 220  
Did worſhip her as ſome celeſtiall viſion.

But *Glauce*, ſeeing all that chaunced there,  
Well weeting how their errour to affoyle,

l. 210, —accepted: l. 220, 'his' dropped in 1609.

Full glad of so good end, to them drew nere,  
 And her salewd with seemely belaccoyle,  
 Ioyous to see her safe after long toyle.  
 Then her besought, as she to her was deare,  
 To graunt vnto those warriours truce a while ;  
 Which yeelded, they their beuers vp did reare,  
 And shew'd themselues to her, such as indeed they were.

When *Britomart* with sharpe auizefull eye 231  
 Beheld the louely face of *Artegall*,  
 Tempred with sterneffe and stout maiestie,  
 She gan eftsoones it to her mind to call,  
 To be the same which in her fathers hall  
 Long since in that enchaunted glasse she saw.  
 Therewith her wrathfull courage gan appall,  
 And haughtie spirits meekely to adaw,  
 That her enhaunced hand she downe can soft withdraw.

Yet she it forst to haue againe vpheld, 240  
 As fayning choler, which was turn'd to cold :  
 But euer when his visage she beheld,  
 Her hand fell downe, and would no longer hold  
 The wrathfull weapon gainst his countnance bold :  
 But when in vaine to fight she oft assayd,  
 She arm'd her tongue, and thought at him to scold ;  
 Nathlesse her tongue not to her will obayd,  
 But brought forth speeches myld, when she would haue  
 misfayd. /

But *Scudamour* now woxen inly glad,  
 That all his gealous feare he false had found, 250

And how that Hag his loue abufed had  
With breach of faith and loyaltie vnfound,  
The which long time his griued hart did wound,  
He thus befpoke ; certes Sir *Artegall*,  
I ioy to fee you lout fo low on ground,  
And now become to liue a Ladies thrall,  
That whylome in your minde wont to defpife them all.

Soone as ſhe heard the name of *Artegall*,  
Her hart did leape, and all her hart-ſtrings tremble,  
For fudden ioy, and ſecret feare withall, 260  
And all her vitall powres with motion nimble,  
To ſuccour it, themſelues gan there aſſemble,  
That by the ſwift recourſe of flushing blood  
Right plaine appeard, though ſhe it would diffemble,  
And fayned ſtill her former angry mood,  
Thinking to hide the depth by troubling of the flood.

When *Glauce* thus gan wifely all vpknit ;  
Ye gentle Knights, whom fortune here hath brought,  
To be ſpectators of this vncouth fit,  
Which ſecret fate hath in this Ladie wrought, 270  
Againſt the courſe of kind, ne meruaile nought,  
Ne thenceforth feare the thing that hethertoo  
Hath troubled both your mindes with idle thought,  
Fearing leaſt ſhe your loues away ſhould woo,  
Feared in vaine, ſith meanes ye ſee there wants there-  
too.

And you Sir *Artegall*, the ſaluage knight,  
Henceforth may not diſdaine, that womans hand

l. 254, 'He' 1609, and Upton and Church ſuggeſt 'Him.'

Hath conquered you anew in second fight :  
 For whylome they haue conquerd fea and land,  
 And / heauen it selfe, that nought may them withstand,  
 Ne henceforth be rebellious vnto loue, 28 I  
 That is the crowne of knighthood, and the band  
 Of noble minds deriued from aboue,  
 Which being knit with vertue, neuer will remoue.

And you faire Ladie knight, my dearest Dame,  
 Relent the rigour of your wrathfull will,  
 Whose fire were better turn'd to other flame ;  
 And wiping out remembrance of all ill,  
 Graunt him your grace, but so that he fulfill  
 The penance, which ye shall to him empart : 290  
 For louers heauen must passe by sorrowes hell.  
 Thereat full inly blushed *Britomart* ;  
 But *Artegall* close smyling ioy'd in secret hart.

Yet durst he not make loue so suddenly,  
 Ne thinke th'affection of her hart to draw  
 From one to other so quite contrary :  
 Besides her modest countenance he saw  
 So goodly graue, and full of princely aw,  
 That it his ranging fancie did refraine,  
 And looser thoughts to lawfull bounds withdraw ; 300  
 Whereby the passion grew more fierce and faine,  
 Like to a stubborne steede whom strong hand would re-  
 fraine.

But *Scudamour* whose hart twixt doubtfull feare  
 And feeble hope hung all this while suspense,

Defiring of his *Amoret* to heare  
Some gladfull newes and fure intelligence,  
Her thus bespake ; But Sir without offence  
Mote I request you tydings of my loue,  
My *Amoret*, sith you her freed fro thence,  
Where she captiued long, great woes did proue; 310  
That where ye left, I may her seeke, as doth behoue. /

To whom thus *Britomart*, certes Sir knight,  
What is of her become, or whether rest,  
I can not vnto you aread a right.  
For from that time I from enchaunters theft  
Her freed, in which ye her all hopelesse left,  
I her preferu'd from perill and from feare,  
And euermore from villenie her kept :  
Ne euer was there wight to me more deare  
Then she, ne vnto whom I more true loue did beare.

Till on a day as through a desert wyld 321  
We trauelled, both wearie of the way  
We did alight, and sate in shadow myld ;  
Where feareleffe I to sleepe me downe did lay.  
But when as I did out of sleepe abray,  
I found her not, where I her left whyleare,  
But thought she wandred was, or gone astray.  
I cal'd her loud, I fought her farre and neare ;  
But no where could her find, nor tydings of her  
heare.

When *Scudamour* those heauie tydings heard, 330  
His hart was thrild with point of deadly feare ;  
Ne in his face or bloud or life appeard,  
But fenselesse stood, like to a mazed steare,

That yet of mortall stroke the ffound doth beare.  
 Till *Glauce* thus ; Faire Sir, be nought difmayd  
 With needeleffe dread, till certaintie ye heare :  
 For yet she may be fafe though fomewhat ftrayd ;  
 Its beft to hope the beft, though of the worft affrayd.

Nathleffe he hardly of her chearefull fpeech  
 Did comfort take, or in his troubled fight 340  
 Shew'd change of better cheare : fo fore a breach  
 That fudden newes had made into his fpright ;  
 Till / *Britomart* him fairely thus behight ;  
 Great caufe of forrow certes Sir ye haue :  
 But comfort take : for by this heauens light  
 I vow, you dead or liuing not to leaue,  
 Till I her find, and wreake on him that did her reauē.

Therewith he refted, and well pleafed was.  
 So peace being confirm'd amongst them all,  
 They tooke their fteeds, and forward thence did pas  
 Vnto fome refting place, which mote befall, 351  
 All being guided by Sir *Artegall*.  
 Where goodly folace was vnto them made,  
 And dayly feafting both in bowre and hall,  
 Vntill that they their wounds well healed had,  
 And wearie limmes recur'd after late vſage bad.

In all which time, Sir *Artegall* made way  
 Vnto the loue of noble *Britomart*,  
 And with meeke ſeruice and much fuit did lay  
 Continuall ſiege vnto her gentle hart ; 360

Which being whylome launcht with louely dart,  
 More eath was new impressiõ to receiue,  
 How euer she her paynd with womanish art  
 To hide her wound, that none might it perceiue :  
 Taine is the art that seekes it felse for to deceiue.

So well he woo'd her, and so well he wrought her,  
 With faire entreatie and sweet blandishment,  
 That at the length vnto a bay he brought her,  
 So as she to his speeches was content  
 To lend an eare, and softly to relent. 370  
 At last through many vowes which forth he pour'd,  
 And many othes, she yeelded her consent  
 To be his loue, and take him for her Lord,  
 Till they with marriage meet might finish that  
 accord. /

Who when they had long time there taken rest,  
 Sir *Artegall*, who all this while was bound  
 Vpon an hard aduenture yet in quest,  
 Fit time for him thence to depart it found,  
 To follow that, which he did long propound ;  
 And vnto her his congee came to take. 380  
 But her therewith full sore displeas'd he found,  
 And loth to leaue her late betrothed make,  
 Her dearest loue full loth so shortly to forsake.

Yet he with strong perswasions her asswaged,  
 And wonne her will to suffer him depart ;  
 For which his faith with her he fast engaged,  
 And thousand vowes from bottome of his hart



That all so soone as he by wit or art  
 Could that atchieue, whereto he did aspire,  
 He vnto her would speedily reuert :  
 No longer space thereto he did desire,  
 But till the horned moone three courses did expire.

With which she for the present was appeased,  
 And yeelded leaue, how euer malcontent  
 She inly were, and in her mind displeased.  
 So early in the morrow next he went  
 Forth on his way, to which he was ybent.  
 Ne wight him to attend, or way to guide,  
 As whylome was the custome ancient  
 Mongst Knights, when on aduentures they did ride  
 Saue that she algates him a while accompanide.

And by the way she fundry purpose found  
 Of this or that, the time for to delay,  
 And of the perils whereto he was bound,  
 The feare whereof seem'd much her to affray :  
 But / all she did was but to weare out day.  
 Full oftentimes she leaue of him did take ;  
 And eft againe deuiz'd some what to say,  
 Which she forgot, whereby excuse to make :  
 So loth she was his companie for to forsake.

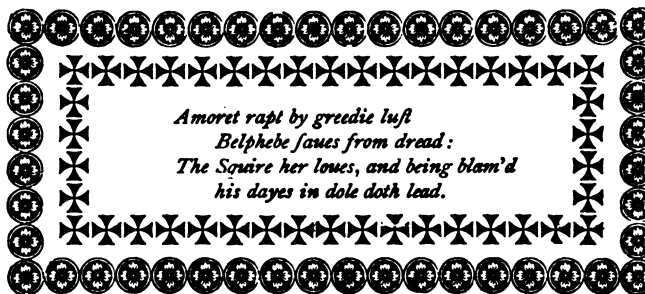
At last when all her speeches she had spent,  
 And new occasion fayld her more to find,  
 She left him to his fortunes gouernment,  
 And backe returned with right heauie mind,

To *Scudamour*, who she had left behind :  
With whom she went to seeke faire *Amoret*,  
Her second care, though in another kind ;  
For vertues onely sake, which doth beget  
True loue and faithfull friendship, she by her did fet.

Backe to that desert forrest they retyred, 420  
Where forie *Britomart* had lost her late ;  
There they her sought, and euery where inquired,  
Where they might tydings get of her estate ;  
Yet found they none. But by what haplesse fate,  
Or hard misfortune she was thence conuayd,  
And stolne away from her beloued mate,  
Were long to tell ; therefore I here will stay  
Vntill another tyde, that I it finish may. /

l. 415, 'whom' : *ib.*, : for , : ll. 418-19, (*which . . . friendship*).

## Cant. VII.



Great God of loue, that with thy cruell darts,  
 Doeſt conquer greateſt conquerors on ground  
 And ſetſt thy kingdome in the captiue harts  
 Of Kings and Keaſars, to thy ſeruiſe bound,  
 What glorie, or what guerdon haſt thou found 1  
 In feeble Ladies tyranning ſo fore ;  
 And adding anguiſh to the bitter wound,  
 With which their liues thou lancedſt long afore,  
 By heaping ſtormes of trouble on them daily more ?

So whylome didſt thou to faire *Florimell* ;  
 And ſo and ſo to noble *Britomart* :  
 So doeſt thou now to her, of whom I tell,  
 The louely *Amoret*, whoſe gentle hart  
 Thou martyreſt with ſorow and with ſmart,  
 In ſaluage forreſts, and in deſerts wide, 2  
 With Beares and Tygers taking heauie part,

l. 3, '*Belphebe*,' and : for ,—accepted : l. 6, '*darts*'—accepted for '*dart*' of '96 : l. 13, '*launchedſt*.'

Withouten comfort, and withouten guide,  
That pittie is to heare the perils, which she tride.

So soone as she with that braue Britoneffe  
Had left that Turneyment for beauties prife,  
They trauel'd long ; that now for wearinesse,  
Both of the way, and warlike exercife,  
Both / through a forest ryding did deuise  
T'alight, and rest their wearie limbs awhile.  
There heaueie sleepe the eye-lids did surprise 30  
Of *Britomart* after long tedious toyle,  
That did her passed paines in quiet rest affoyle.

The whiles faire *Amoret*, of nought affeard,  
Walkt through the wood, for pleasure, or for need ;  
When suddenly behind her backe she heard  
One rushing forth out of the thickest weed,  
That ere she backe could turne to taken heed,  
Had vnawares her snatched vp from ground.  
Feebly she shriekt, but so feebly indeed,  
That *Britomart* heard not the shrilling found, 40  
There where through weary trauel she lay sleeping sound.

It was to weet a wilde and saluage man,  
Yet was no man, but onely like in shape,  
And eke in stature higher by a span,  
All ouergrowne with haire, that could awhape  
An hardy hart ; and his wide mouth did gape  
With huge great teeth, like to a tusked Bore :  
For he liu'd all on rauin and on rape  
Of men and beasts ; and fed on fleshly gore,  
The signe whereof yet stain'd his bloody lips afore. 50

l. 26, ; for, —accepted : l. 33 (*of nought affeard*) : l. 46, ; after 'hart.'

His neather lip was not like man nor beaft,  
 But like a wide deepe poke, downe hanging low,  
 In which he wont the relickes of his feast,  
 And cruell spoyle, which he had spard, to stow :  
 And ouer it his huge great nose did grow,  
 Full dreadfully empurpled all with blood ;  
 And downe both sides two wide long eares did glow—  
 And raught downe to his waste, when vp he stood,  
 More great then th'eaes of Elephants by *Indus* flood. —/

His waft was with a wreath of yuie greene 6—0  
 Engirt about, ne other garment wore :  
 For all his haire was like a garment seene ;  
 And in his hand a tall young oake he bore,  
 Whose knottie snags were sharpned all afore,  
 And beath'd in fire for steele to be in sted.  
 But whence he was, or of what wombe ybore,  
 Of beafts, or of the earth, I haue not red :  
 But certes was with milke of Wolues and Tygres fed.

This vgly creature in his armes her snatcht,  
 And through the forrest bore her quite away, 7—0  
 With briers and bushes all to rent and scratcht ;  
 Ne care he had, ne pittie of the pray,  
 Which many a knight had fought so many a day.  
 He stayed not, but in his armes her bearing  
 Ran, till he came to th'end of all his way,  
 Vnto his caue, farre from all peoples hearing, (*fearing*.  
 And there he threw her in, nought feeling, ne nought

For she deare Ladie all the way was dead,  
 Whilest he in armes her bore ; but when she felt

l. 76, , after '*caue*'—accepted: l. 78, (*deare Lady*).

Her selfe downe souft, she waked out of dread 80  
 Streight into grieve, that her deare hart nigh swelt,  
 And eft gan into tender teares to melt.  
 Then when she lookt about, and nothing found  
 But darknesse and dread horreur, where she dwelt,  
 She almost fell againe into a ffound,  
 Ne wist whether aboue she were, or vnder ground.

With that she heard some one clofe by her side  
 Sighing and sobbing fore, as if the paine  
 Her tender hart in peeces would diuide :  
 Which she long listning, softly askt againe 90  
 What / misfite wight it was that so did plaine ?  
 To whom thus aunfwer'd was : Ah wretched wight  
 That seekes to know anothers grieve in vaine,  
 Vnweeting of thine owne like haplesse plight :  
 Selfe to forget to mind another, is ouerfight.

Aye me (saide she) where am I, or with whom ?  
 Emong the liuing, or emong the dead ?  
 What shall of me vnhappy maid become ?  
 Shall death be th'end, or ought else worfe, aread.  
 Vnhappy mayd (then answerd she) whose dread 100  
 Vntride, is lesse then when thou shalt it try :  
 Death is to him, that wretched life doth lead,  
 Both grace and gaine ; but he in hell doth lie,  
 That liues a loathed life, and wifhing cannot die.

This difmall day hath thee a caytiue made,  
 And vassall to the vilest wretch aliue ;

l. 95, '*ouersight*' : l. 105, '*caytiue*'—some suggest 'captiue' ; but '*caytiue*' is Spenser's usual word. Cf. Book III., c. XI., l. 88, and Glossary, *s.v.* : l. 106, ; for,—accepted.

Whose curfed vſage and vngodly trade  
 The heauens abhorre, and into darkeneſſe driue.  
 For on the ſpoile of women he doth liue,  
 Whose bodies chaſt, when euer in his powre 110  
 He may them catch, vnable to gaineſtriue,  
 He with his ſhamefull luſt doth firſt deflowre,  
 And afterwards themſelues doth cruelly deuoure.

Now twenty daies, by which the ſonnes of men  
 Diuide their works, haue paſt through heuen ſheene,  
 Since I was brought into this dolefull den ;  
 During which ſpace theſe ſory eies haue ſeen  
 Seauen women by him ſlaine, and eaten clene.  
 And now no more for him but I alone,  
 And this old woman here remaining beene ; 120  
 Till thou cam'ſt hither to augment our mone ;  
 And of vs three to morrow he will ſure eate one. /

Ah dreadfull tidings which thou doeſt declare,  
 (Quoth ſhe) of all that euer hath bene knownen :  
 Full many great calamities and rare  
 This feeble breſt endured hath, but none  
 Equall to this, where euer I haue gone.  
 But what are you, whom like vnlucky lot  
 Hath linckt with me in the ſame chaine attone? 130  
 To tell (quoth ſhe) that which ye ſee, needs not ;  
 A wofull wretched maid, of God and man forgot.

But what I was, it irkes me to reherſe  
 Daughter vnto a Lord of high degree ;

l. 111, '*gaineſtriue*': ll. 114-15 (*by . . . works*): l. 121, ; for ,—accepted.

That ioyd in happy peace, till fates peruerse  
 With guilefull loue did secretly agree,  
 To ouerthrow my state and dignitie.  
 It was my lot to loue a gentle fwaine,  
 Yet was he but a Squire of low degree ;  
 Yet was he meet, vnlesse mine eye did faine, 140  
 By any Ladies side for Leman to haue laine.

But for his meannesse and disparagement,  
 My Sire, who me too dearely well did loue,  
 Vnto my choise by no meanes would assent,  
 But often did my folly fowle reprove.  
 Yet nothing could my fixed mind remoue,  
 But whether willed or nilled friend or foe,  
 I me resolu'd the vtmost end to proue,  
 And rather then my loue abandon so,  
 Both fire, and friends, and all for euer to forgo. 150

Thenceforth I fought by secret meanes to worke  
 Time to my will, and from his wrathfull fight  
 To hide th'intent, which in my heart did lurke,  
 Till I thereto had all things ready dight,  
 So / on a day vnweeting vnto wight,  
 I with that Squire agreede away to flit,  
 And in a priuy place, betwixt vs hight,  
 Within a groue appointed him to meete ;  
 To which I boldly came vpon my feeble feete.

But ah vnhappy houre me thither brought : 160  
 For in that place where I him thought to find,  
 There was I found, contrary to my thought,  
 Of this accursed Carle of hellish kind ;



The shame of men, and plague of womankind :  
 Who truffling me, as Eagle doth his pray,  
 Me hether brought with him, as swift as wind,  
 Where yet vntouched till this present day,  
 I rest his wretched thrall, the sad *AEmylia*.

Ah sad *AEmylia* (then sayd *Amoret*,)  
 Thy ruefull plight I pittie as mine owne. 17<  
 But read to me, by what deuise or wit,  
 Haft thou in all this time, from him vnknowne  
 Thine honor sau'd, though into thraldome throwne ?  
 Through helpe (quoth she) of this old woman here  
 I haue so done, as she to me hath showne.  
 For euer when he burnt in lustfull fire,  
 She in my stead supplide his bestiall desire.

Thus of their euils as they did discourse,  
 And each did other much bewaile and mone ;  
 Loe where the villaine selfe, their sorrowes fourse,  
 Came to the caue, and rolling thence the stone, 181  
 Which wont to stop the mouth thereof, that none  
 Might issue forth, came rudely rushing in,  
 And spredding ouer all the flore alone,  
 Gan dight himselfe vnto his wonted finne ;  
 Which ended, then his bloudy banquet should be-  
 ginne. /

Which when as fearefull *Amoret* perceiued,  
 She staid not the vtmost end thereof to try,  
 But like a ghastly Gelt, whose wits are reaued,  
 Ran forth in hast with hideous outcry, 190

l. 164, : for, —accepted : l. 173, ? for . : l. 187, 'when-as.'

For horroure of his shamefull villany.  
But after her full lightly he vprofe,  
And her purfu'd as fast as she did flie :  
Full fast she flies, and farre afore him goes,  
Ne feeles the thorns and thickets pricke her tender toes.

Nor hedge, nor ditch, nor hill, nor dale she staies,  
But ouerleapes them all, like Robucke light,  
And through the thickest makes her nighest waies ;  
And euermore when with regardfull fight  
She looking backe, espies that griesly wight      200  
Approching nigh, she gins to mend her pace,  
And makes her feare a spur to haft her flight :  
More swift then *Myrrh*' or *Daphne* in her race,  
Or any of the Thracian Nymphes in saluage chafe.

Long so she fled, and so he follow'd long ;  
Ne liuing aide for her on earth appeares,  
But if the heauens helpe to redresse her wrong,  
Moued with pitty of her plenteous teares.  
It fortun'd *Belphebe* with her pearces  
The woody Nimphs, and with that louely boy,      210  
Was hunting then the Libbards and the Beares,  
In these wild woods, as was her wonted ioy,  
To banish sloth, that oft doth noble mindes annoy.

It so befell, as oft it fals in chace,  
That each of them from other fundred were,  
And that same gentle Squire arriu'd in place,  
Where this same curfed caytiue did appeare,

L 196, 'Nor'—Collier would read 'For hedge': L 207, 'to'—sic in '96  
und 1609, but omitted in 1679: L 214 (as . . . chace).

Pursuing / that faire Lady full of feare ;  
 And now he her quite ouertaken had ;  
 And now he her away with him did beare 22  
 Vnder his arme, as seeming wondrous glad,  
 That by his grenning laughter mote farre off be rad.

Which drery fight the gentle Squire espying,  
 Doth haft to crosse him by the nearest way,  
 Led with that wofull Ladies piteous crying,  
 And him assailes with all the might he may :  
 Yet will not he the louely spoile downe lay,  
 But with his craggy club in his right hand,  
 Defends him selfe, and faues his gotten pray.  
 Yet had it bene right hard him to withstand, 230  
 But that he was full light and nimble on the land.

Thereto the villaine vsed craft in fight ;  
 For euer when the Squire his iauelin shooke,  
 He held the Lady forth before him right,  
 And with her body, as a buckler, broke  
 The puissance of his intended stroke.  
 And if it chaunst, (as needs it must in fight)  
 Whilest he on him was greedy to be wroke,  
 That any little blow on her did light,  
 Then would he laugh aloud, and gather great delight.

Which subtill sleight did him encumber much, 241  
 And made him oft, when he would strike, forbear ;  
 For hardly could he come the carle to touch,  
 But that he her must hurt, or hazard neare :

l. 218, ; for,—accepted : l. 223, 'Which' for 'With'—misprint of '96  
 —accepted : l. 226, : for,—accepted.

Yet he his hand so carefully did beare,  
 That at the last he did himfelfe attaine,  
 And therein left the pike head of his speare.  
 A streame of coleblacke bloud thence gusht amaine,  
 That all her filken garments did with bloud bestaine. /

With that he threw her rudely on the flore, 250  
 And laying both his hands vpon his glaue,  
 With dreadfull strokes let driue at him so fore,  
 That forst him flie abacke, himfelfe to saue :  
 Yet he therewith so felly still did raue,  
 That scarce the Squire his hand could once vpreare,  
 But for aduantage ground vnto him gaue,  
 Tracing and trauerfing, now here, now there ;  
 For bootlesse thing it was to think fuch blowes to beare.

Whilest thus in battell they embusied were,  
*Belphebe* raunging in that forrest wide, 260  
 The hideous noife of their huge strokes did heare,  
 And drew thereto, making her eare her guide.  
 Whom when that theefe approching nigh espide,  
 With bow in hand, and arrowes ready bent,  
 He by his former combate would not bide,  
 But fled away with ghastly dreriment,  
 Well knowing her to be his deaths sole instrument.

Whom seeing flie, she speedily pourfewed  
 With winged feete, as nimble as the winde ;  
 And euer in her bow she ready shewed, 270  
 The arrow, to his deadly marke defynde,

l. 256, (*for aduantage*) : l. 260, (*raunging . . . wide*) : l. 264, '*bow*,'  
 and so l. 270 : l. 269, ; for, —accepted.

As when *Latonaes* daughter cruell kynde,  
 In vengement of her mothers great difgrace,  
 With fell despight her cruell arrowes tynde  
 Gainst wofull *Niobes* vnhappy race,  
 That all the gods did mone her miserable case.

So well she fped her and fo far she ventred,  
 That ere vnto his hellifh den he raught,  
 Euen as he ready was there to haue entred,  
 She sent an arrow forth with mighty draught, 28= c  
 That / in the very dore him ouercaught,  
 And in his nape arriuing, through it thrild  
 His greedy throte, therewith in two diftraught,  
 That all his vitall fpirites thereby fpild,  
 And all his hairy breft with gory bloud was fild.

Whom when on ground she groueling faw to rowle,  
 She ran in haft his life to haue bereft :  
 But ere she could him reach, the finfull fowle  
 Hauing his carrion corfe quite fenceleffe left,  
 Was fled to hell, furcharg'd with spoile and theft. 290  
 Yet ouer him she there long gazing ftood,  
 And oft admir'd his monftrous shape, and oft  
 His mighty limbs, whileft all with filthy bloud  
 The place there ouerflowne, feemd like a fodaine flood.

Thenceforth she pafte into his dreadfull den,  
 Where nought but darkefome drerineffe she found,  
 Ne creature faw, but hearkned now and then  
 Some litle whifpering, and foft groning found.

l. 295, 'Thence, forth.'

With that she askt, what ghosts there vnder ground  
Lay hid in horreur of eternall night ? 300  
And bad them, if so be they were not bound,  
To come and shew themselues before the light,  
Now freed from feare and danger of that difmall wight.

Then forth the sad *AEmylia* issewed,  
Yet trembling euery ioynt through former feare ;  
And after her the Hag, there with her mewed,  
A foule and lothsome creature did appeare ;  
A leman fit for such a loue deare.  
That mou'd *Belphebe* her no lesse to hate,  
Then for to rue the others heauy cheare ; 310  
Of whom she gan enquire of her estate.  
Who all to her at large, as hapned, did relate. /

Hence she them brought toward the place, where late  
She left the gentle Squire with *Amoret* :  
There she him found by that new louely mate,  
Who lay the whiles in fwoune, full sadly set,  
From her faire eyes wiping the deawy wet,  
Which softly stild, and kissing them atweene,  
And handling soft the hurts, which she did get.  
For of that Carle she sorely bruz'd had beene, 320  
Als of his owne rash hand one wound was to be seene.

Which when she saw, with sodaine glauncing eye,  
Her noble heart with sight thereof was fild  
With deepe disdaine, and great indignity,  
That in her wrath she thought them both haue thrild,  
With that selfe arrow, which the Carle had kild :

l. 304, '*jad*' for misprint of '96 '*faid*'—accepted.

Yet held her wrathfull hand from vengeance fore,  
 But drawing nigh, ere he her well beheld ;  
 Is this the faith she said, and said no more,  
 But turnd her face, and fled away for euermore. 330

He seeing her depart, arose vp light,  
 Right fore agrieued at her sharpe reproofe,  
 And follow'd fast : but when he came in sight,  
 He durst not nigh approch, but kept aloofe,  
 For dread of her displeasures vtmost proofe.  
 And euermore, when he did grace entreat,  
 And framed speaches fit for his behoofe,  
 Her mortall arrowes, she at him did threat,  
 And forst him backe with fowle dishonor to retreat.

At last when long he follow'd had in vaine, 340  
 Yet found no ease of grieve, nor hope of grace,  
 Vnto those woods he turned backe againe,  
 Full of sad anguish, and in heauy case :  
 And / finding there fit solitary place  
 For wofull wight, chose out a gloomy glade,  
 Where hardly eye mote see bright heauens face,  
 For mossy trees, which couered all with shade  
 And sad melancholy, there he his cabin made.

His wonted warlike weapons all he broke,  
 And threw away, with vow to vse no more, 350  
 Ne thenceforth euer strike in battell stroke,  
 Ne euer word to speake to woman more ;  
 But in that wildernesse, of men forlore,  
 And of the wicked world forgotten quight,  
 His hard mishap in dolor to deplore,

And waft his wretched daies in wofull plight ;  
So on him felfe to wreake his follies owne defpight.

And eke his garment, to be thereto meet,  
He wilfully did cut and shape anew ;  
And his faire lockes, that wont with ointment sweet  
To be embaulm'd, and sweat out dainty dew, 361  
He let to grow and grievly to concrew,  
Vncomb'd, vncurl'd, and carelessly vnshed ;  
That in fhort time his face they ouergrew,  
And ouer all his fhoulders did difpred,  
That who he whilome was, vneath was to be red.

There he continued in this carefull plight,  
Wretchedly wearing out his youthly yeares,  
Through wilfull penury confumed quight,  
That like a pined ghofte he foone appeares. 370  
For other food then that wilde forreft beares,  
Ne other drinke there did he euer tafte,  
Then running water, tempered with his teares,  
The more his weakened body fo to waft :  
That out of all mens knowledge he was worne at  
laft./

For on a day, by fortune as it fell,  
His owne deare Lord Prince *Arthure* came that way,  
Seeking aduentures, where he mote heare tell ;  
And as he through the wandring wood did ftray,  
Hauing efpied this Cabin far away, 380  
He to it drew, to weet who there did wonne ;  
Weening therein fome holy Hermit lay,

l. 361, 'dew' : l. 376, (by . . . fell).



That did refort of finfull people shonne ;  
 Or else some woodman shrowded there from scorching  
 funne.

Arriuing there, he found this wretched man,  
 Spending his daies in dolour and despaire,  
 And through long fasting woxen pale and wan,  
 All ouergrown with rude and rugged haire ;  
 That albeit his owne deare Squire he were,  
 Yet he him knew not, ne auiz'd at all, 390  
 But like strange wight, whom he had seene no where,  
 Saluting him, gan into speach to fall,  
 And pittie much his plight, that liu'd like outcast thrall.

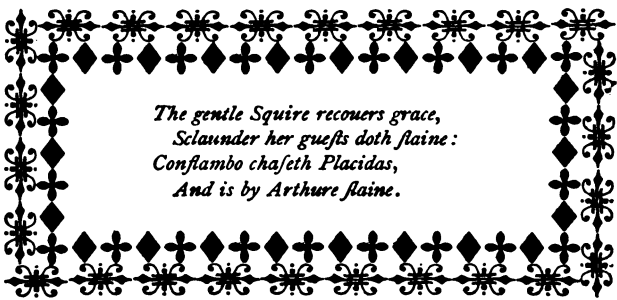
But to his speach he aunswered no whit,  
 But stood still mute, as if he had beene dum,  
 Ne signe of fence did shew, ne common wit,  
 As one with grieve and anguishe ouercum,  
 And vnto euery thing did aunswere mum :  
 And euer when the Prince vnto him spake,  
 He louted lowly, as did him becum, 400  
 And humble homage did vnto him make,  
 Midst sorrow shewing ioyous semblance for his sake.

At which his vncouth guise and vsage quaint  
 The Prince did wonder much, yet could not ghesse  
 The cause of that his sorrowfull constraint ;  
 Yet weend by secret signes of manlinesse,  
 Which / clofe appeard in that rude brutishnesse,  
 That he whilome some gentle swaine had beene,  
 Traind vp in feats of armes and knightlinesse ;  
 Which he obseru'd, by that he him had seene 410  
 To weld his naked sword, and try the edges keene.

And eke by that he saw on every tree,  
How he the name of one engrauen had,  
Which likly was his liefest loue to be,  
For whom he now so forely was bestad ;  
Which was by him *BELPHEBE* rightly rad.  
Yet who was that *Belphebe*, he ne wist ;  
Yet saw he often how he waxed glad,  
When he it heard, and how the ground he kist,  
Wherein it written was, and how himselfe he blist: 420

Tho when he long had marked his demeanor,  
And saw that all he said and did, was vaine,  
Ne ought mote make him change his wonted tenor,  
Ne ought mote ease or mitigate his paine,  
He left him there in languor to remaine,  
Till time for him should remedy prouide,  
And him restore to former grace againe.  
Which for it is too long here to abide,  
I will deferre the end vntill another tide. 429

## Cant. VIII.



*The gentle Squire recouers grace,  
Sclaunder her gueſts doth ſtaine:  
Conſlambo chaſeth Placidus,  
And is by Arthure ſaine.*

WELL ſaid the wiſeman, now prou'd true by this,  
Which to this gentle Squire did happen late.  
That the diſpleaſure of the mighty is  
Then death it ſelfe more dread and deſperate.  
For naught the ſame may calme ne mitigate, 10  
Till time the tempeſt doe thereof delay  
With ſufferaunce ſoft, which rigour can abate,  
And haue the ſterne remembrance wypt away  
Of bitter thoughts, which deepe therein infix'd lay.

Like as it fell to this vnhappy boy,  
Whoſe tender heart the faire *Belphebe* had,  
With one ſterne looke ſo daunted, that no ioy  
In all his life, which afterwards he lad,  
He euer taſted, but with penaunce ſad  
And penſiue ſorrow pind and wore away, 20  
Ne euer laught, ne once ſhew'd countenance glad;

l. 10, 'nought' : l. 14, 'infected' 1611 (bad).

But alwaies wept and wailed night and day,  
As blasted bloosme through heat doth languish & decay ;

Till on a day, as in his wonted wife  
His doole he made, there chaunst a turtle Doue  
To come, where he his dolours did deuise,  
That likewise late had lost her dearest loue ;  
Which / losse her made like passion also proue.  
Who seeing his sad plight, her tender hart  
With deare compassion deeply did enmoue,        30  
That she gan mone his vnderferued smart,  
And with her dolefull accent beare with him apart.

Shee sitting by him as on ground he lay,  
Her mournfull notes full piteously did frame,  
And thereof made a lamentable lay,  
So sensibly compylde, that in the same  
Him seemed oft he heard his owne right name.  
With that he forth would poure so plenteous teares,  
And beat his breast vnworthy of such blame,        39  
And knocke his head, and rend his rugged heares,  
That could haue perft the hearts of Tigres & of Beares.

Thus long this gentle bird to him did vse,  
Withouten dread of perill to repaire  
Vnto his wonne, and with her mournfull muse  
Him to recomfort in his greatest care,  
That much did ease his mourning and misfare :  
And euery day for guerdon of her song,  
He part of his small feast to her would share ;  
That at the last of all his woe and wrong  
Companion she became, and so continued long.        50

l. 23, ;—accepted, and so l. 27 : ll. 24-5, (*as . . . made*).

Vpon a day as she him fate beside,  
 By chance he certaine miniments forth drew,  
 Which yet with him as relickes did abide  
 Of all the bounty, which *Belphebe* threw  
 On him, whilst goodly grace she did him shew :  
 Amongst the rest a iewell rich he found,  
 That was a Ruby of right perfect hew,  
 Shap'd like a heart, yet bleeding of the wound,  
 And with a litle golden chaine about it bound. /

The same he tooke, and with a riband new, 6  
 In which his Ladies colours were, did bind  
 About the turtles necke, that with the vew  
 Did greatly solace his engriued mind.  
 All vnawares the bird, when she did find  
 Her selfe so deckt, her nimble wings displaid,  
 And flew away, as lightly as the wind :  
 Which sodaine accident him much dismaid,  
 And looking after long, did marke which way she straid.

But when as long he looked had in vaine,  
 Yet saw her forward still to make her flight, 70  
 His weary eie returnd to him againe,  
 Full of discomfort and disquiet plight,  
 That both his iuell he had lost so light,  
 And eke his deare companion of his care.  
 But that sweet bird departing, flew forth right  
 Through the wide region of the wastfull aire,  
 Vntill she came where wonned his *Belphebe* faire.

There found she her (as then it did betide)  
 Sitting in couert shade of arbors sweet,

l. 61, (*In . . . were*).

After late weary toile, which she had tride 80  
 In saluage chafe, to rest as seem'd her meet.  
 There she alighting, fell before her feet,  
 And gan to her her mournfull plaint to make,  
 As was her wont : thinking to let her weet  
 The great tormenting griefe, that for her sake  
 or gentle Squire through her displeasure did pertake.

ie her beholding with attentiu eye,  
 At length did marke about her purple brest  
 That precious iuell, which she formerly  
 Had knowne right well, with colourd ribbands drest :  
 There / with she rose in hast, and her adrest 91  
 With ready hand it to haue rest away.  
 But the swift bird obayd not her behest,  
 But swaru'd aside, and there againe did stay ;  
 e follow'd her, and thought againe it to assay.

id euer when she nigh approcht, the Doue  
 Would flit a litle forward, and then stay,  
 Till she drew neare, and then againe remoue ;  
 So tempting her still to pursue the pray,  
 And still from her escaping soft away : 100  
 Till that at length into that forrest wide,  
 She drew her far, and led with slow delay.  
 In th'end she her vnto that place did guide,  
 hereas that wofull man in languor did abide.

foones she flew vnto his feareleffe hand,  
 And there a piteous ditty new deuiz'd,

. 84, : for ,—accepted : l. 86, '*partake*' : l. 90, , after '*well*'—ac-  
 ted.

As if she would haue made him vnderstand,  
 His forrowes cause to be of her despis'd.  
 Whom when she saw in wretched weedes disguis'd,  
 With heary glib deform'd, and meiger face,  
 Like ghost late risen from his graue agryz'd, 110  
 She knew him not, but pittied much his case,  
 And wisht it were in her to doe him any grace.

He her beholding, at her feet downe fell,  
 And kist the ground on which her sole did tread,  
 And washt the same with water, which did well  
 From his moist eies, and like two streames proceed;  
 Yet spake no word, whereby she might aread  
 What misfite wight he was, or what he ment:  
 But as one daunted with her presence dread,  
 Onely few ruefull lookes vnto her sent, 120  
 As messengers of his true meaning and intent. /

Yet nathemore his meaning she ared,  
 But wondred much at his so felcouth case,  
 And by his persons secret seemlyhed  
 Well weend, that he had beene some man of place,  
 Before misfortune did his hew deface:  
 That being mou'd with ruth she thus bespake.  
 Ah wofull man, what heauens hard disgrace,  
 Or wrath of cruell wight on thee ywrake? 130  
 Or selfe disliked life doth thee thus wretched make?

If heauen, then none may it redresse or blame,  
 Sith to his powre we all are subiect borne:

l. 107, '*him*' by Church is changed to '*her*': l. 116, ; for, —accepted,  
 and l. 118, : for, .

If wrathfull wight, then fowle rebuke and shame  
 Be theirs, that haue so cruell thee forlorne ;  
 But if through inward grieve or wilfull scorne  
 Of life it be, then better doe aduise.  
 For he whose daies in wilfull woe are worne,  
 The grace of his Creator doth despise,  
 That will not vse his gifts for thanklesse nigardise. 140

When so he heard her say, eftfoones he brake  
 His fodaine silence, which he long had pent,  
 And fighting inly deepe, her thus bespake ;  
 Then haue they all themfelues against me bent :  
 For heauen, first author of my languishment,  
 Enuying my too great felicity,  
 Did closely with a cruell one consent,  
 To cloud my daies in dolefull misery,  
 And make me loath this life, still longing for to die.

Ne any but your selfe, o dearest dred, 150  
 Hath done this wrong, to wreake on worthlesse wight  
 Your high displeasure, through misdeeming bred :  
 That when your pleasure is to deeme aright,  
 Ye / may redresse, and me restore to light.  
 Which fory words her mightie hart did mate  
 With mild regard, to see his ruefull plight,  
 That her inburning wrath she gan abate,  
 And him receiu'd againe to former fauours state.

In which he long time afterwards did lead  
 An happie life with grace and good accord, 160

l. 137, '*auise*' : l. 145, (*first . . . languishment*).



Fearlesse of fortunes chaunge or enuies dread,  
 And eke all mindlesse of his owne deare Lord  
 The noble Prince, who neuer heard one word  
 Of tydings, what did vnto him betide,  
 Or what good fortune did to him afford,  
 But through the endlesse world did wander wide,  
 Him seeking euermore, yet no where him descride.

Till on a day as through that wood he rode,  
 He chaunst to come where those two Ladies late,  
*Æmylia* and *Amoret* abode, 170  
 Both in full fad and forrowfull estate ;  
 The one right feeble through the euill rate  
 Of food, which in her duresse she had found :  
 The other almost dead and desperate (wound,  
 Through her late hurts, and through that haplesse  
 With which the Squire in her defence her fore astound.

Whom when the Prince beheld, he gan to rew  
 The euill case in which those Ladies lay ;  
 But most was moued at the piteous vew  
 Of *Amoret*, so neare vnto decay, 180  
 That her great daunger did him much dismay.  
 Estfoones that pretious liquour forth he drew,  
 Which he in store about him kept alway,  
 And with few drops thereof did softly dew  
 Her wounds, that vnto strength restor'd her soone  
 anew./

Tho when they both recouered were right well,  
 He gan of them inquire, what euill guide

l. 184, 'dew,' as before.

Them thether brought, and how their harmes befell.  
To whom they told all, that did them betide,  
And how from thraldome vile they were vntide 190  
Of that fame wicked Carle, by Virgins hond ;  
Whose bloudie corse they shew'd him there beside,  
And eke his caue, in which they both were bond :  
At which he wondred much, when all those signes he  
fond.

And euermore he greatly did desire  
To know, what Virgin did them thence vnbind ;  
And oft of them did earnestly inquire,  
Where was her won, and how he mote her find.  
But when as nought according to his mind  
He could outlearne, he them from ground did reare :  
No seruice lothsome to a gentle kind ; 201  
And on his warlike beast them both did beare,  
Himselfe by them on foot, to succour them from feare.

So when that forrest they had passed well,  
A litle cotage farre away they spide,  
To which they drew, ere night vpon them fell ;  
And entring in, found none therein abide,  
But one old woman fitting there beside,  
Vpon the ground in ragged rude attyre,  
With filthy lockes about her scattered wide, 210  
Gnawing her nayles for felnesse and for yre,  
And there out sucking venime to her parts entyre.

A foule and loathly creature fure in fight,  
And in conditions to be loath'd no lesse :

For she was stufte with rancour and despight  
 Vp to the throat ; that oft with bitterneffe  
 It / forth would breake, and gush in great excesse,  
 Pouring out streames of poyson and of gall  
 Gainst all, that truth or vertue doe professe ;  
 Whom she with leasings lewdly did miscall, 220  
 And wickedly backbite : Her name men *Sclaunder* call.

Her nature is all goodnesse to abuse,  
 And caufesse crimes continually to frame,  
 With which she guiltlesse persons may accuse,  
 And steale away the crowne of their good name ;  
 Ne euer Knight so bold, ne euer Dame  
 So chaste and loyall liu'd, but she would striue  
 With forged cause them falsely to defame ;  
 Ne euer thing so well was doen aliue,  
 But she with blame would blot, & of due praise depriue.

Her words were not, as common words are ment, 231  
 T'expresse the meaning of the inward mind,  
 But noysome breath, and poysonous spirit sent  
 From inward parts, with cancred malice lind,  
 And breathed forth with blast of bitter wind ; (hart,  
 Which passing through the eares, would pierce the  
 And wound the soule it selfe with grieve vnkind :  
 For like the stings of Aspes, that kill with smart,  
 Her spightfull words did pricke, & wound the inner part.

Such was that Hag, vnmeet to host such guests, 240  
 Whom greatest Princes court would welcome fayne ;

l. 216, ; for,—accepted, and so l. 219 : l. 221, '*Slaunder*' : l. 241,  
 ; for,—accepted.

But neede, that anfwers not to all requests,  
Bad them not looke for better entertayne ;  
And eke that age despyfed niceneffe vaine,  
Enur'd to hardnesse and to homely fare,  
Which them to warlike discipline did trayne,  
And manly limbs endur'd with litle care  
Against all hard mishaps and fortunelesse misfare. /

Then all that euening welcommed with cold,  
And chearelesse hunger, they together spent ; 250  
Yet found no fault, but that the Hag did scold  
And rayle at them with grudgefyll discontent,  
For lodging there without her owne consent :  
Yet they endured all with patience milde,  
And vnto rest themselues all onely lent.  
Regardlesse of that queane so base and vilde,  
To be vniustly blamd, and bitterly reuilde.

Here well I weene, when as these rimes be red  
With misregard, that some rash witted wight,  
Whose looser thought will lightly be misled, 260  
These gentle Ladies will misdeeme too light,  
For thus conuerfing with this noble Knight ;  
Sith now of dayes such temperance is rare  
And hard to finde, that heat of youthfull spright  
For ought will from his greedie pleasure spare :  
More hard for hungry steed t'abstaine from pleafant lare.

But antique age yet in the infancie  
Of time, did liue then like an innocent,

l. 242, (*that . . . requests*) : ll. 249-50, (*welcommed . . . hunger*) : l. 265,  
: substituted for , .

In fimple truth and blameleffe chaſtitie,  
 Ne then of guile had made experiment, 270  
 But voide of vile and treacherous intent,  
 Held vertue for it ſelfe in ſoueraine awe :  
 Then loyall loue had royall regiment,  
 And each vnto his luſt did make a lawe,  
 From all forbidden things his liking to withdraw.

The Lyon there did with the Lambe confort,  
 And eke the Doue fate by the Faulcons fide,  
 Ne each of other feared fraud or tort,  
 But did in ſafe ſecuritie abide,  
 With / outen perill of the ſtronger pride : 280  
 But when the world woxe old, it woxe warre old  
 (Whereof it hight) and hauing ſhortly tride  
 The traines of wit, in wickedneſſe woxe bold,  
 And dared of all finnes the ſecrets to vnfold.

Then beautie, which was made to repreſent  
 The great Creatours owne reſemblance bright,  
 Vnto abuſe of lawleſſe luſt was lent,  
 And made the baite of beſtiall delight :  
 Then faire grew foule, and foule grew faire in fight,  
 And that which wont to vanquiſh God and man,  
 Was made the vaſſall of the victors might ; 291  
 Then did her glorious flowre wex dead and wan,  
 Deſpiſd and troden downe of all that ouerran.

And now it is ſo vtterly decayd,  
 That any bud thereof doth ſcarſe remaine,  
 But if few plants preferu'd through heauenly ayd,  
 In Princes Court doe hap to ſprout againe,

l. 270, misprinted '*them*' : l. 296, (*preferu'd . . . ayde*).

Dew'd with her drops of bountie Soueraine,  
 Which from that goodly glorious flowre proceed,  
 Sprung of the auncient stocke of Princes straine, 300  
 Now th'onely remnant of that royall breed,  
 Whose noble kind at first was sure of heauenly feed.

Tho foone as day discouered heauens face  
 To sinfull men with darknes ouerdight,  
 This gentle crew gan from their eye-lids chace  
 The drowzie humour of the dampish night,  
 And did themselues vnto their iourney dight.  
 So forth they yode, and forward softly paced,  
 That them to view had bene an vncouth sight ;  
 How all the way the Prince on footpace traced, 310  
 The Ladies both on horse, together fast embraced. /

Soone as they thence departed were afore,  
 That shamefull Hag, the slaunder of her sexe,  
 Them follow'd fast, and them reuiled fore,  
 Him calling theefe, them whores ; that much did vex  
 His noble hart ; thereto she did annexe  
 Falso crimes and facts, such as they neuer ment,  
 That those two Ladies much asham'd did wexe :  
 The more did she pursue her lewd intent,  
 And rayl'd and rag'd, till she had all her poyson  
 spent.

At last when they were passed out of fight, 320  
 Yet she did not her spightfull speach forbear,  
 But after them did barke, and still backbite,  
 Though there were none her hatefull words to heare :

Like as a curre doth felly bite and teare  
 The stone, which passed straunger at him threw ;  
 So she them seeing past the reach of eare,  
 Against the stones and trees did rayle anew,  
 Till she had duld the sting, which in her tongs end  
 grew.

They passing forth kept on their readie way,  
 With easie steps so soft as foot could stryde. 330  
 Both for great feebleffe, which did oft assay  
 Faire *Amoret*, that scarcely she could ryde ;  
 And eke through heauie armes, which fore annoyd  
 The Prince on foot, not wonted so to fare ;  
 Whose steadie hand was faine his steede to guyde,  
 And all the way from trotting hard to spare,  
 So was his toyle the more, the more that was his care.

At length they spide, where towards them with speed  
 A Squire came gallopping, as he would flie ;  
 Bearing a litle Dwarfe before his steed, 340  
 That all the way full loud for aide did crie,  
 That / seem'd his shrikes would rend the brasen skie :  
 Whom after did a mightie man purfew,  
 Ryding vpon a Dromedare on hie,  
 Of stature huge, and horrible of hew,  
 That would haue maz'd a man his dreadfull face to vew.

For from his fearefull eyes two fierie beames,  
 More sharpe then points of needles did proceede,  
 Shooting forth farre away two flaming streames,  
 Full of sad powre, that poysonous bale did breede

l. 332, ; for,—accepted, and so l. 339.

To all, that on him lookt without good heed, 351  
And secretly his enemies did slay :  
Like as the Bafiliske of serpents feede,  
From powrefull eyes close venom doth conuay  
Into the lookers hart, and killeth farre awaye.

He all the way did rage at that fame Squire,  
And after him full many threatnings threw,  
With curses vaine in his auengefull ire :  
But none of them (so fast away he flew)  
Him ouertooke, before he came in vew. 360  
Where when he saw the Prince in armour bright,  
He cald to him aloud, his case to rew,  
And rescue him through succour of his might,  
From that his cruell foe, that him pursewd in fight.

Eftsoones the Prince tooke downe those Ladies twaine  
From loftie steede, and mounting in their stead  
Came to that Squire, yet trembling euery vaine :  
Of whom he gan enquire his cause of dread ;  
Who as he gan the same to him aread,  
Loe hard behind his backe his foe was preft, 370  
With dreadfull weapon aymed at his head ;  
That vnto death had doen him vnredrest,  
Had not the noble Prince his readie stroke repest. /

Who thrusting boldly twixt him and the blow,  
The burden of the deadly brunt did beare  
Vpon his shield, which lightly he did throw  
Ouer his head, before the harme came neare.  
Nathlesse it fell with so despiteous dreare



And heaue fway, that hard vnto his crowne  
 The shield it droue, and did the couering reare : 38c  
 Therewith both Squire and dwarfe did tomble downe  
 Vnto the earth, and lay long while in senselesse swowne

Whereat the Prince full wrath, his strong right hand  
 In full auengement heaued vp on hie,  
 And stroke the Pagan with his steely brand  
 So fore, that to his saddle bow thereby  
 He bowed low, and so a while did lie :  
 And fure had not his maslie yron mace  
 Betwixt him and his hurt bene happily,  
 It would haue cleft him to the girding place, 390  
 Yet as it was, it did astonish him long space.

But when he to himselfe returnd againe,  
 All full of rage he gan to curse and sweare,  
 And vow by *Mahoune* that he should be slaine.  
 With that his murdrous mace he vp did reare,  
 That seemed nought the soufe thereof could beare,  
 And therewith smote at him with all his might.  
 But ere that it to him approched neare,  
 The royall child with readie quicke foresight,  
 Did shun the prooffe thereof and it auoyded light. 400

But ere his hand he could recure againe,  
 To ward his bodie from the balefull stound,  
 He smote at him with all his might and maine,  
 So furiously, that ere he wist, he found  
 His / head before him tombling on the ground.  
 The whiles his babling tongue did yet blaspheme  
 And curse his God, that did him so confound ;

The whiles his life ran foorth in bloudie streame,  
His foule defcended downe into the Stygian reame.

Which when that Squire beheld, he woxe full glad 410  
To see his foe breath out his spright in vaine :  
But that same dwarfe right forie seem'd and fad,  
And howld aloud to see his Lord there slaine,  
And rent his haire and scratcht his face for paine.  
Then gan the Prince at leasure to inquire  
Of all the accident, there hapned plaine,  
And what he was, whose eyes did flame with fire ;  
All which was thus to him declared by that Squire.

This mightie man (quoth he) whom you haue slaine,  
Of an huge Geaunteffe whylome was bred ; 420  
And by his strength rule to himselfe did gaine  
Of many Nations into thraldome led,  
And mightie kingdomes of his force adred ;  
Whom yet he conquer'd not by bloudie fight,  
Ne hostes of men with banners brode difpred,  
But by the powre of his infectious fight,  
With which he killed all, that came within his might.

Ne was he euer vanquished afore,  
But euer vanquisht all, with whom he fought ;  
Ne was there man so strong, but he downe bore, 430  
Ne woman yet so faire, but he her brought  
Vnto his bay, and captiued her thought.  
For most of strength and beautie his desire  
Was spoyle to make, and wast them vnto nought,  
By casting secret flakes of lustfull fire  
From his false eyes, into their harts and parts entire. /

Therefore *Corflambo* was he cald aright,  
 Though namelesse there his bodie now doth lie,  
 Yet hath he left one daughter that is hight  
 The faire *Pæana* ; who seemes outwardly 44C  
 So faire, as euer yet saw liuing eie :  
 And were her vertue like her beautie bright,  
 She were as faire as any vnder skie.  
 But ah she giuen is to vaine delight,  
 And eke too loofe of life, and eke of loue too light.

So as it fell there was a gentle Squire,  
 That lou'd a Ladie of high parentage ;  
 But for his meane degree might not aspire  
 To match so high : her friends with counsell sage,  
 Dissuaded her from such a disparage. 45O  
 But she, whose hart to loue was wholly lent,  
 Out of his hands could not redeeme her gage,  
 But firmly following her first intent,  
 Resolu'd with him to wend, gainst all her friends consent.

So twixt themselues they pointed time and place,  
 To which when he according did repaire,  
 An hard mishap and disauentrous case  
 Him chaunst ; in stead of his *Æmylia* faire  
 This Gyants sonne, that lies there on the laire  
 An headlesse heape, him vnawares there caught, 460  
 And all dismayd through mercilesse despaire,  
 Him wretched thrall vnto his dongeon brought,  
 Where he remaines, of all vnsuccour'd and vnfought.

This Gyants daughter came vpon a day  
 Vnto the prifon in her ioyous glee,

l. 444, (*ah* /) : l. 447, ; for ,—accepted : l. 449, : for ,—accepted.

To view the thrals, which there in bondage lay :  
Amongst the rest she chaunced there to see  
This / louely swaine the Squire of low degree ;  
To whom she did her liking lightly cast,  
And wooed him her paramour to bee : 470  
From day to day she woo'd and prayd him fast,  
And for his loue him promist libertie at last.

He though affide vnto a former loue,  
To whom his faith he firmly ment to hold,  
Yet feeling not how thence he mote remoue,  
But by that meanes, which fortune did vnfold,  
Her graunted loue, but with affection cold  
To win her grace his libertie to get.  
Yet she him still detaines in captiue hold  
Fearing leaft if she should him freely fet, 480  
He would her shortly leaue, and former loue forget.

Yet so much fauour she to him hath hight,  
Aboue the rest, that he sometimes may space  
And walke about her gardens of delight,  
Hauing a keeper still with him in place ;  
Which keeper is this Dwarfe, her dearling base,  
To whom the keyes of euery prison dore  
By her committed be, of speciall grace,  
And at his will may whom he list restore,  
And whom he list referue, to be afflicted more. 490

Whereof when tydings came vnto mine eare,  
Full inly forie for the feruent zeale,  
Which I to him as to my soule did beare ;  
I thether went ; where I did long conceale

l. 485, ; for ,—accepted, and so l. 494 : ll. 492-3 within ( ).

My felfe, till that the Dwarfe did me reueale,  
 And told his Dame, her Squire of low degree  
 Did secretly out of her prifon fteale ;  
 For me he did miftake that Squire to bee ;  
 For neuer two fo like did liuing creature fee. /

Then was I taken and before her brought : 500  
 Who through the likenefle of my outward hew,  
 Being likewife beguiled in her thought,  
 Gan blame me much for being fo vntrew,  
 To feeke by flight her fellowfhip t'efchew,  
 That lou'd me deare, as deareft thing aliuie.  
 Thence ſhe commaunded me to prifon new ;  
 Whereof I glad did not gaineſay nor ſtrive,  
 But ſuffred that ſame Dwarfe me to her dongeon drieue

There did I finde mine onely faithfull friend  
 In heauy plight and fad perplexitie ; 51  
 Whereof I forie, yet my felfe did bend,  
 Him to recomfort with my companie.  
 But him the more agreeu'd I found thereby :  
 For all his ioy, he ſaid, in that diſtreſſe  
 Was mine and his *Amylias* libertie.  
*Amylia* well he lou'd, as I mote gheſſe ;  
 Yet greater loue to me then her he did profeſſe.

But I with better reaſon him auiz'd,  
 And ſhew'd him how through error and miſ-thought  
 Of our like perſons eath to be diſguiz'd, 520  
 Or his exchange, or freedome might be wrought.  
 Whereunto full loth was he, ne would for ought  
 Conſent, that I who ſtood all feareleſſe free,

Should wilfully be into thraldome brought,  
Till fortune did perforce it so decree.  
Yet ouerrul'd at last, he did to me agree.

The morrow next about the wonted howre,  
The Dwarfe cald at the doore of *Amyas*,  
To come forthwith vnto his Ladies bowre.  
In steed of whom forth came I *Placidus*, 530  
And / vndiscerned, forth with him did pas.  
There with great ioyance and with gladfome glee,  
Of faire *Pæana* I receiued was,  
And oft imbraist, as if that I were hee,  
And with kind words accoyd, vowing great loue to mee.

Which I, that was not bent to former loue,  
As was my friend, that had her long refusd,  
Did well accept, as well it did behoue,  
And to the present neede it wifely vsd.  
My former hardnesse first I faire excusd ; 540  
And after promist large amends to make.  
With such smooth termes her error I abusd,  
To my friends good, more then for mine owne sake,  
For whose sole libertie I loue and life did stake.

Thenceforth I found more fauour at her hand,  
That to her Dwarfe, which had me in his charge,  
She bad to lighten my too heauie band,  
And graunt more scope to me to walke at large.  
So on a day as by the flowrie marge  
Of a fresh streame I with that Elfe did play, 550  
Finding the meanes how I might vs enlarge,  
But if that Dwarfe I could with me conuay,  
I lightly snatcht him vp and with me bore away.

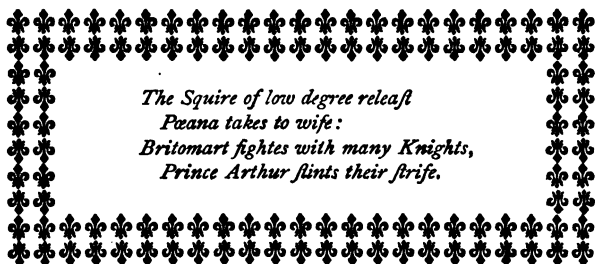
Thereat he shriekt aloud, that with his cry  
 The Tyrant felfe came forth with yelling bray,  
 And me purfew'd ; but nathemore would I  
 Forgoe the purchase of my gotten pray,  
 But haue perforce him hether brought away.  
 Thus as they talked, loe where nigh at hand  
 Those Ladies two yet doubtfull through difmay 560  
 In prefence came, defirous t'vnderftand  
 Tydings of all, which there had hapned on the land. /

Where foone as fad *Amylia* did espie  
 Her captiue louers friend, young *Placidus* :  
 All mindlefse of her wonted modeftie,  
 She to him ran, and him with streight embras  
 Enfolding faid, and liues yet *Amyas* ?  
 He liues (quoth he) and his *Amylia* loues.  
 Then leffe (faid ſhe) by all the woe I pas,  
 With which my weaker patience fortune proues. 570  
 But what mishap thus long him fro my felfe remoues ?

Then gan he all this ſtorie to renew,  
 And tell the courſe of his captiuitie ;  
 That her deare hart full deeply made to rew,  
 And figh full fore, to heare the miſerie,  
 In which ſo long he mercileſſe did lie.  
 Then after many teares and forrowes ſpent,  
 She deare befought the Prince of remedie :  
 Who thereto did with readie will conſent  
 And well perform'd, as ſhall appeare by his euent. 580

l. 560, (*yet . . . difmay*).

## Cant. / IX.



**H** Ard is the doubt, and difficult to deeme,  
 When all three kinds of loue together meet,  
 And doe dispart the hart with powre extreme,  
 Whether shall weigh the balance downe; to weete  
 The deare affection vnto kindred sweet, 10  
 Or raging fire of loue to woman kind,  
 Or zeale of friends combynd with vertues meet.  
 But of them all, the band of vertues mind  
 Me seemes, the gentle hart should most assured bind.

For naturall affection foone doth cesse,  
 And quenched is with *Cupids* greater flame:  
 But faithfull friendship doth them both suppress,  
 And them with maystring discipline doth tame,  
 Through thoughts aspyring to eternall fame.  
 For as the soule doth rule the earthly masse, 20  
 And all the seruice of the bodie frame,

l. 3, 'Peana' is suggested by Church to be read, 'Æmylia': l. 12, 'vertuous': l. 13, , after 'all' accepted: l. 14, , added after 'me seemes' and removed after 'hart.'



So loue of foule doth loue of bodie passe,  
No lesse then perfect gold furmounts the meaneft brasse.

All which who list by tryall to assay,  
Shall in this storie find approued plaine ;  
In which these Squires true friendship more did sway,  
Then either care of parents could refraine, /  
Or loue of fairest Ladie could constraîne.  
For though *Pæana* were as faire as morne,  
Yet did this Trustie squire with proud disdaine 30  
For his friends sake her offred fauours scorne,  
And she her selfe her fyre, of whom she was yborne.

Now after that Prince *Arthur* graunted had,  
To yeeld strong succour to that gentle swayne,  
Who now long time had lyen in prison sad,  
He gan aduise how best he mote darrayne  
That enterprize, for greatest glories gayne.  
That headlesse tyrants tronke he reard from ground,  
And hauing ympt the head to it agayne,  
Vpon his vsuall beast it firmly bound, 40  
And made it so to ride, as it aliue was found.

Then did he take that chaced Squire, and layd  
Before the ryder, as he captiue were,  
And made his Dwarfe, though with vnwilling ayd,  
To guide the beast, that did his maister beare,  
Till to his castle they approched neare.  
Whom when the watch, that kept continuall ward  
Saw comming home ; all voide of doubtfull feare,  
He running downe, the gate to him vnbar'd ;  
Whom straight the Prince ensuing, in together far'd. 50

l. 26, 'this': l. 44, (*though . . . ayd*).

Here he did find in her delitious boure  
The faire *Pæana* playing on a Rote,  
Complayning of her cruell Paramoure,  
And finging all her sorrow to the note,  
As she had learned readily by rote.  
That with the sweetnesse of her rare delight,  
The Prince halfe rapt, began on her to dote :  
Till better him bethinking of the right,  
He her vnwares attacht, and captiue held by might.

Thence / being forth produc'd, when she perceiued  
Her owne deare fire, she cald to him for aide. 60  
But when of him no aunswere she receiued,  
But saw him sencelesse by the Squire vpstaide,  
She weened well, that then she was betraide :  
Then gan she loudly cry, and weepe, and waile,  
And that same Squire of treason to vpbraide.  
But all in vaine, her plaints might not preuaile,  
He none there was to reskue her, ne none to baile.

Then tooke he that same Dwarfe, and him compeld  
To open vnto him the prision dore,  
And forth to bring those thrals, which there he held.  
Thence forth were brought to him aboue a score 71  
Of Knights and Squires to him vnknowne afore :  
All which he did from bitter bondage free,  
And vnto former liberty restore.  
Amongst the rest, that Squire of low degree  
Came forth full weake and wan, not like him selfe to  
bee.

Vhom foone as faire *AEmylia* beheld,  
And *Placidus*, they both vnto him ran,

And him embracing fast betwixt them held,  
 Striuing to comfort him all that they can, 80  
 And kissing oft his visage pale and wan.  
 That faire *Pæana* them beholding both,  
 Gan both enuy, and bitterly to ban ;  
 Through iealous passion weeping inly wroth,  
 To see the fight perforce, that both her eyes were lot

But when a while they had together beene,  
 And diuerfly conferred of their case,  
 She, though full oft she both of them had seene  
 A sunder, yet not euer in one place, /  
 Began to doubt, when she them saw embrace, 9  
 Which was the captiue Squire she lou'd so deare,  
 Deceiued through great likenesse of their face.  
 For they so like in person did appeare,  
 That she vneath discerned, whether whether weare.

And eke the Prince, when as he them auized,  
 Their like refemblaunce much admired there,  
 And mazd how nature had so well disguised  
 Her worke, and counterfet her selfe so nere,  
 As if that by one patterne seene somewhere,  
 She had them made a paragone to be, 100  
 Or whether it through skill, or error were.  
 Thus gazing long, at them much wondred he,  
 So did the other knights and Squires, which him did see.

Then gan they ransacke that same Castle strong,  
 In which he found great store of hoorded threasure,

l. 92, . for ,—accepted : l. 103, 'him'—Church reads 'them': l. 105, 'he'—Church suggests 'they' or 'was.' Nothing easier than such emendations, but Spenser was no finical purist.

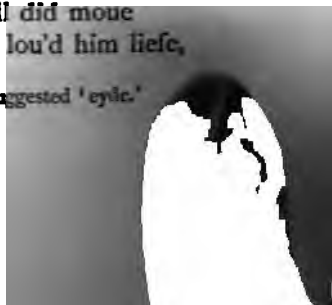
The which that tyrant gathered had by wrong  
 And tortious powre, without respect or measure.  
 Vpon all which the Briton Prince made feasure,  
 And afterwards continu'd there a while.  
 To rest him selfe, and solace in soft pleasure 110  
 Those weaker Ladies after weary toile ;  
 To whom he did diuide part of his purchast spoile.

And for more ioy, that captiue Lady faire  
 The faire *Pazana* he enlarged free ;  
 And by the rest did set in sumptuous chaire,  
 To feast and frolicke ; nathemore would she  
 Shew gladfome countenance nor pleasaunt glee :  
 But griued was for losse both of her fire,  
 And eke of Lordship, with both land and fee :  
 But most she touched was with grieve entire, 120  
 For losse of her new loue, the hope of her desire.

But / her the Prince through his well wonted grace,  
 To better termes of myldnesse did entreat,  
 From that fowle rudenesse, which did her deface ;  
 And that same bitter corfiue, which did eat  
 Her tender heart, and made refraine from meat,  
 He with good thewes and speaches well applyde,  
 Did mollifie, and calme her raging heat.  
 For though she were most faire, and goodly dyde,  
 Yet she it all did mar with cruelty and pride. 130

And for to shut vp all in friendly loue,  
 Sith loue was first the ground of all her grieve,  
 That trusty Squire he wifely well did moue  
 Not to despise that dame, which lou'd him liefe,

1. 129, 'dyde'—Church actually suggested 'eyde.'



Till he had made of her some better priefe,  
 But to accept her to his wedded wife.  
 Thereto he offred for to make him chiefe  
 Of all her land and lordship during life :  
 He yeelded, and her tooke ; so stinted all their strife.

From that day forth in peace and ioyous blis, 140  
 They liu'd together long without debate :  
 Ne priuate iarre, ne spite of enemis  
 Could shake the safe assuraunce of their state.  
 And she whom Nature did so faire create,  
 That she mote match the fairest of her daies,  
 Yet with lewd loues and lust intemperate  
 Had it defaste ; thenceforth reformd her waies,  
 That all men much admyrde her change, and spake her  
 praise.

Thus when the Prince had perfectly compylde  
 These paires of friends in peace and fetled rest, 150  
 Him selfe, whose mind did trauell as with chylde,  
 Of his old loue, conceau'd in secret brest, /  
 Resolued to pursue his former quest ;  
 And taking leaue of all, with him did beare  
 Faire *Amoret*, whom Fortune by bequest  
 Had left in his protection whileare,  
 Exchanged out of one into an other feare.

Feare of her safety did her not constraine,  
 For well she wist now in a mighty hond,  
 Her person late in perill, did remaine, 160  
 Who able was all daungers to withstond.

l. 141, : for, —accepted : l. 153, 'quest' is misprinted 'guest' in '96 and  
 1609 : l. 155, 'bequest'—1611 badly reads 'request.'

But now in feare of thame she more did stond,  
Seeing her selfe all foly succourlesse,  
Left in the victors powre, like vassall bond ;  
Whose will her weakenesse could no way repressse,  
In case his burning lust should breake into excesse.

But cause of feare sure had she none at all  
Of him, who goodly learned had of yore  
The course of loose affection to forstall,  
And lawlesse lust to rule with reasons lore ;      170  
That all the while he by his fide her bore,  
She was as safe as in a Sanctuary ;  
Thus many miles they two together wore,  
To seeke their loues disperfed diuerfly,  
Yet neither shewed to other their hearts priuity.

At length they came, whereas a troupe of Knights  
They saw together skirmishing, as seemed :  
Sixe they were all, all full of fell despight,  
But foure of them the battell best befeemed,      179  
That which of them was best, mote not be deemed.  
Those foure were they, from whom false *Florimell*  
By *Braggadocchio* lately was redeemed.  
To weet, sterne *Druon*, and lewd *Claribell*,  
Loue-lauish *Blandamour*, and lustfull *Paridell*.

*Druons* / delight was all in fingle life,  
And vnto Ladies loue would lend no leasure :  
The more was *Claribell* enraged rife  
With feruent flames, and loued out of measure :  
So eke lou'd *Blandamour*, but yet at pleasure  
Would change his liking, and new Lemans proue :  
But *Paridell* of loue did make no threasure,      190

But lusted after all, that him did moue.  
So diuerfly thefe foure difpofed were to loue.

But thofe two other which befide them ftoode,  
Were *Britomart*, and gentle *Scudamour*,  
Who all the while beheld their wrathfull moode,  
And wondred at their impacable ftoure,  
Whofe like they neuer faw till that fame houre :  
So dreadfull ftrokes each did at other driue,  
And laid on load with all their might and powre, 2 400  
As if that euery dint the ghofl would riue  
Out of their wretched corfes, and their liues depriue.

As when *Dan AEolus* in great difpleafure,  
For loffe of his deare loue by *Neptune* hent,  
Sends forth the winds out of his hidden threafure,  
Vpon the fea to wreake his fell intent ;  
They breaking forth with rude vnruliment,  
From all foure parts of heauen doe rage full fore,  
And toffe the deepes, and teare the firmament,  
And all the world confound with wi[l]de vprore, 2 410  
As if in ftead thereof they *Chaos* would reftore.

Caufe of their difcord, and fo fell debate,  
Was for the loue of that fame fnowy maid,  
Whome they had loft in Turneyment of late,  
And feeking long, to weet which way fhe ftraid /  
Met here together ; where through lewd vpbraide  
Of *Ate* and *Dueffa* they fell out,  
And each one taking part in others aide,

l. 210, 'wi[l]de'—it hardly needed the alleged Drayton correction of 'wide' by 'wilde' to put right an obvious misprint of '96, 1609, 1611, etc., but Mr. J. Payne Collier tells us of fuch : l. 216, : for,—accepted.

This cruell conflict raised thereabout,  
Whose dangerous succeſſe depended yet in dout. 220

For ſometimes *Paridell* and *Blandamour*  
The better had, and bet the others backe,  
Eftſoones the others did the field recoure,  
And on their foes did worke full cruell wracke :  
Yet neither would their fiendlike fury ſlacke,  
But euermore their malice did augment ;  
Till that vneath they forced were for lacke  
Of breath, their raging rigour to relent,  
And reſt themſelues for to recouer ſpirits ſpent.

heir gan they change their ſides, and new parts take ;  
For *Paridell* did take to *Druons* ſide, 231  
For old deſpight, which now forth newly brake  
Gainſt *Blandamour*, whom alwaies he enuide :  
And *Blandamour* to *Claribell* relide.  
So all aſreſh gan former fight renew.  
As when two Barkes, this caried with the tide,  
That with the wind, contrary courſes ſew,  
wind and tide doe change, their courſes change anew.

Henceforth they much more furiously gan fare,  
As if but then the battell had begonne, 240  
Ne helmets bright, ne hawberks ſtrong did ſpare,  
That through the cliſts the vermeil bloud out ſponne,  
And all adowne their riuen ſides did ronne.  
Such mortall malice, wonder was to ſee  
In friends profeſt, and ſo great outrage donne :  
But ſooth is ſaid, and tride in each degree,  
aint friends when they fall out, moſt cruell fomen bee.

l. 222, , for ;—accepted : l. 230, '*Their*' (1st) = *there*,—used interchangeably. In 1611 it is '*There* gan.' Church read '*Then* gan.'



Thus / they long while continued in fight,  
 Till *Scudamour*, and that same Briton maide,  
 By fortune in that place did chance to light : 25  
 Whom soone as they with wrathfull eie bewraide,  
 They gan remember of the fowle vpbraide,  
 The which that Britoneffe had to them donne,  
 In that late Turney for the snowy maide ;  
 Where she had them both shamefully fordonne,  
 And eke the famous prize of beauty from them wonne

Eftfoones all burning with a fresh desire,  
 Of fell reuenge, in their malicious mood  
 They from them felues gan turne their furious ire,  
 And cruell blades yet steeming with whot bloud, 26  
 Against those two let driue, as they were wood :  
 Who wondring much at that so sodaine fit,  
 Yet nought difmayd, them stoutly well withstood ;  
 Ne yeelded foote, ne once abacke did flit,  
 But being doubly smitten likewise doubly smit.

The warlike Dame was on her part assaid,  
 Of *Claribell* and *Blandamour* attone ;  
 And *Paridell* and *Druon* fiercely laid  
 At *Scudamour*, both his professed fone.  
 Foure charged two, and two furcharged one ; 2  
 Yet did those two them felues so brauely beare,  
 That the other litle gained by the lone,  
 But with their owne repayed duely weare,  
 And vsury withall : such gaine was gotten deare.

Full oftentimes did *Britomart* assay  
 To speake to them, and some emparlance moue

l. 273, 'repayed' for 'repayred'—accepted.

But they for nought their cruell hands would stay,  
Ne lend an eare to ought, that might behoue, /  
As when an eager mastiffe once doth proue  
The tast of bloud of some engored beast, 280  
No words may rate, nor rigour him remoue  
From greedy hold of that his blouddy feast :  
So litle did they hearken to her sweet beheast.

Whom when the Briton Prince a farre beheld  
With ods of so vnequall match opprest,  
His mighty heart with indignation sweld,  
And inward grudge fild his heroicke brest :  
Eftsoones him felfe he to their aide addrest,  
And thrusting fierce into the thickest preace,  
Diuided them, how euer loth to rest, 290  
And would them faine from battell to surceasse,  
With gentle words perfwading them to friendly peace.

But they so farre from peace or patience were,  
That all at once at him gan fiercely flie,  
And lay on load, as they him downe would beare ;  
Like to a storme, which houers vnder skie  
Long here and there, and round about doth stie,  
At length breakes downe in raine, and haile, and fleet,  
First from one coast, till nought thereof be drie ;  
And then another, till that likewise fleet ; 300-  
And so from side to side till all the world it weat.

But now their forces greatly were decayd,  
The Prince yet being fresh vntoucht afore ;  
Who them with speeches milde gan first disswade  
From such foule outrage, and them long forbore :

Till fecing them through fuffrance hartned more,  
 Him felfe he bent their furies to abate,  
 And layd at them fo fharpely and fo fore,  
 That fhortly them compelled to retrate,  
 And being brought in daunger, to relent too late. 310

But / now his courage being throughly fired,  
 He ment to make them know their follies prife,  
 Had not thofe two him instantly defired  
 T'affwage his wrath, and pardon their mefprife.  
 At whofe request he gan him felfe aduife  
 To ftay his hand, and of a truce to treat  
 In milder tearmes, as lift them to deuife :  
 Mongft which, the caufe of their fo cruell heat  
 He did them afke : who all that paffed gan repeat.

And told at large how that fame errant Knight, 320  
 To weete faire *Britomart*, them late had foyled  
 In open turney, and by wrongfull fight  
 Both of their publicke praife had them defpoyled,  
 And alfo of their priuate loues beguyled ;  
 Of two full hard to read the harder theft.  
 But ſhe that wrongfull challenge ſoone affoyled,  
 And ſhew'd that ſhe had not that Lady reft,  
 (As they fuppoſd) but her had to her liking left.

To whom the Prince thus goodly well replied ;  
 Certes fir Knight[s], ye ſeemen much to blame, 330  
 To rip vp wrong, that battell once hath tried ;  
 Wherein the honor both of Armes ye ſhame,

l. 318, , after '*which*,' and l. 319, : for ,—accepted, and ; for , l. 324 :  
 l. 330, '*Knigh[s]*'—Upton was the firſt to correct the very obvious  
 misprint.

And eke the loue of Ladies foule defame;  
 To whom the world this franchise euer yeelded,  
 That of their loues choise they might freedom clame,  
 And in that right should by all knights be shielded:  
 Gainst which me seemes this war ye wrongfully haue  
 wielded.

And yet (quoth she) a greater wrong remains:  
 For I thereby my former loue haue lost,  
 Whom seeking euer since with endlesse paines, 340  
 Hath me much sorrow and much trauell cost; /  
 Aye me to see that gentle maide so toft.  
 But *Scudamour* then fighting deepe, thus saide,  
 Certes her losse ought me to sorrow most,  
 Whose right she is, where euer she be straide,  
 Through many perils wonne, and many fortunes waide.

For from the first that I her loue profest,  
 Vnto this houre, this present lucklesse howre,  
 I neuer ioyed happinesse nor rest,  
 But thus turmoild from one to other stowre, 350  
 I wast my life, and doe my daies deuowre  
 In wretched anguise and incessant woe,  
 Passing the measure of my feeble powre,  
 That liuing thus, a wretch and louing so,  
 I neither can my loue, ne yet my life forgo.

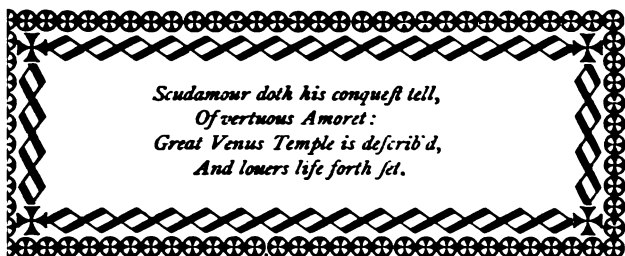
Then good fir *Claribell* him thus bespake,  
 Now were it not fir *Scudamour* to you,  
 Dislikefull paine, so sad a taske to take,  
 Mote we entreat you, fith this gentle crew

l. 341, '*irrauell*': l. 354, '*I*' = aye in '96 inadvertently before '*and*.'

Is now so well accorded all anew ; 360  
That as we ride together on our way,  
Ye will recount to vs in order dew  
All that aduenture, which ye did assay  
For that faire Ladies loue : past perils well apay.

So gan the rest him likewise to require,  
But *Britomart* did him importune hard,  
To take on him that paine : whose great desire  
He glad to fatisfie, him selfe prepar'd  
To tell through what misfortune he had far'd 370  
In that atchieuement, as to him befell.  
And all those daungers vnto them declar'd,  
Which fith they cannot in this Canto well  
Comprised be, I will them in another tell.

## Cant. I X.



[ Rue he it said, what euer man it sayd,  
That loue with gall and hony doth abound,  
But if the one be with the other wayd,  
For euery dram of hony therein found,  
A pound of gall doth ouer it redound. 10  
That I too true by triall haue approued :  
For since the day that first with deadly wound  
My heart was launcht, and learned to haue loued,  
euer ioyed howre, but still with care was moued.

d yet such grace is giuen them from aboue,  
That all the cares and euill which they meet,  
May nought at all their fetled mindes remoue,  
But seeme gainst common sence to them most sweet;  
As boasting in their martyrdome vnmeet. 20  
So all that euer yet I haue endured,  
I count as naught, and tread downe vnder feet,  
Since of my loue at length I rest assured,  
nat to disloyalty she will not be allured.

, misprinted 'conquest' in '96: l. 13, 'launc't': l. 21, 'nought,' as before.

Long were to tell the trauell and long toile,  
 Through which this shield of loue I late haue won **me**  
 And purchas'd this peerelesse beauties spoile,  
 That harder may be ended, then begonne, /  
 But since ye so desire, your will be donne.  
 Then hearke ye gentle knights and Ladies free,  
 My hard mishaps, that ye may learne to shonne ; **3 c**  
 For though sweet loue to conquer glorious bee,  
 Yet is the paine thereof much greater then the fee.

What time the fame of this renowned prife  
 Flew first abroad, and all mens eares possesse  
 I hauing armes then taken, gan auise  
 To winne me honour by some noble gest,  
 And purchase me some place amongst the best.  
 I boldly thought (so young mens thoughts are bold)  
 That this fame braue emprise for me did rest,  
 And that both shield and she whom I behold, **40**  
 Might be my lucky lot ; fith all by lot we hold.

So on that hard aduenture forth I went,  
 And to the place of perill shortly came.  
 That was a temple faire and auncient,  
 Which of great mother *Venus* bare the name,  
 And farre renowned through exceeding fame ;  
 Much more then that, which was in *Paphos* built,  
 Or that in *Cyprus*, both long since this fame,  
 Though all the pillours of the one were guilt,  
 And all the others pauement were with yuory spilt. **50**

And it was seated in an Island strong,  
 Abounding all with delices most rare,

And wall'd by nature gainst inuaders wrong,  
 That none mote haue accesse, nor inward fare,  
 But by one way, that passage did prepare.  
 It was a bridge ybuilt in goodly wize,  
 With curious Corbes and pendants grauen faire,  
 And arched all with porches, did arise  
 On stately pillours, fram'd after the Doricke guize.

And / for defence thereof, on th'other end 60  
 There reared was a castle faire and strong,  
 That warded all which in or out did wend,  
 And flancked both the bridges sides along,  
 Gainst all that would it faine to force or wrong.  
 And therein wonned twenty valiant Knights ;  
 All twenty tride in warres experience long ;  
 Whose office was, against all nanner wights  
 By all meanes to maintaine, that castels ancient rights.

Before that Castle was an open plaine,  
 And in the midst thereof a pillar placed ; 70  
 On which this shield, of many fought in vaine,  
 The shield of Loue, whose guerdon me hath graced,  
 Was hangd on high with golden ribbands laced ;  
 And in the marble stone was written this,  
 With golden letters goodly well enchaced,  
*Blessed the man that well can vse his blis :*  
*VVhose euer be the shield, faire Amoret be his.*

Which when I red, my heart did inly earne,  
 And pant with hope of that aduentures hap :  
 Ne stayd further newes thereof to learne, 80  
 But with my speare vpon the shield did rap,

l. 58, (*arched . . . porches*) : l. 68, '*ancients*' misprint of '96 : l. 78, '*yearne*.'



That all the castle ringed with the clap.  
 Streight forth issfewd a Knight all arm'd to prooffe,  
 And brauely mounted to his most mishap :  
 Who staying nought to question from aloofe,  
 Ran fierce at me, that fire glaunst from his horses hoofe.

Whom boldly I encountred (as I could)  
 And by good fortune shortly him vnfeated.  
 Eftsoones out sprung two more of equall mould ;  
 But I them both with equall hap defeated : / 90  
 So all the twenty I likewise entreated,  
 And left them groning there vpon the plaine.  
 Then preacing to the pillour I repeated  
 The read thereof for guerdon of my paine,  
 And taking downe the shield, with me it did retaine.

So forth without impediment I past,  
 Till to the Bridges vtter gate I came :  
 The which I found sure lockt and chained fast.  
 I knockt, but no man aunswred me by name ;  
 I cald, but no man answerd to my clame. 100  
 Yet I perseuer'd still to knocke and call,  
 Till at the last I spide within the same,  
 Where one stood peeping through a creuis small ;  
 To whom I cald aloud, halfe angry therewithall.

That was to weet the Porter of the place,  
 Vnto whose trust the charge thereof was lent :  
 His name was *Doubt*, that had a double face,  
 Th'one forward looking, th'other backward bent,  
 Therein resembling *Ianus* auncient,

l. 103, ; for ,—accepted, and so ll. 117, 130.

Which hath in charge the ingate of the yeare : 110  
And euermore his eyes about him went,  
As if some proued perill he did feare,  
Or did misdoubt some ill, whose cause did not appeare.

On th'one fide he, on th'other fate *Delay*,  
Behinde the gate, that none her might espy ;  
Whose manner was all passengers to stay,  
And entertaine with her occasions fly ;  
Through which some lost great hope vnheedily,  
Which neuer they recouer might againe ;  
And others quite excluded forth, did ly 120  
Long languishing there in vnpytted paine,  
And seeking often entraunce, afterwards in vaine.

Me / when as he had priuily espyde,  
Bearing the shield which I had conquerd late,  
He kend it streight, and to me opened wide.  
So in I past, and streight he closed the gate.  
But being in, *Delay* in close awaite  
Caught hold on me, and thought my steps to stay,  
Feigning full many a fond excuse to prate,  
And time to steale, the threasure of mans day ; 130  
Whose smallest minute lost, no riches render may.

But by no meanes my way I would forflow,  
For ought that euer she could doe or fay,  
But from my lofty steede dismounting low,  
Past forth on foote, beholding all the way  
The goodly workes, and stones of rich assay,  
Cast into fundry shapes by wondrous skill,  
That like on earth no where I reckon may :



And vnderneath, the riuer rolling still (wil 1.  
With murmure soft, that seem'd to serue the workmans

Thence forth I passed to the second gate, 14 H  
The *Gate of good desert*, whose goodly pride  
And costly frame, were long here to relate.  
The same to all stoode alwaies open wide :  
But in the Porch did euermore abide  
An hideous Giant, dreadfull to behold,  
That stopt the entraunce with his spacious stride,  
And with the terrour of his countenance bold  
Full many did affray, that else faine enter would.

His name was *Daunger* dreaded ouer all, 15 O  
Who day and night did watch and duely ward,  
From fearefull cowards, entrance to forstall,  
And faint-heart-fooles, whom shew of perill hard /  
Could terrifie from Fortunes faire adward :  
For oftentimes faint hearts at first espiall  
Of his grim face, were from approaching scard ;  
Vnworthy they of grace, whom one deniall  
Excludes from fairest hope, withouten further triall.

Yet many doughty warriours, often tride 160  
In greater perils to be stout and bold,  
Durst not the sternnesse of his looke abide,  
But soone as they his countenance did behold,  
Began to faint, and feele their corage cold.  
Againe some other, that in hard affaies  
Were cowards knowne, and litle count did hold,  
Either through gifts, or guile, or such like waies,  
Crept in by stouping low, or stealing of the kaies.

But I though meaneſt man of many moe,  
 Yet much diſdaining vnto him to lout,  
 Or creepe betweene his legs, ſo in to goe, 170  
 Refolu'd him to affault with manhood ſtout,  
 And either beat him in, or driue him out.  
 Eſtfoones aduauncing that enchaunted ſhield,  
 With all my might I gan to lay about :  
 Which when he ſaw, the glaue which he did wield  
 He gan forthwith t'auale, and way vnto me yield.

So as I entred, I did backward looke,  
 For feare of harme, that might lie hidden there ;  
 And loe his hindparts, whereof heed I tooke,  
 Much more deformed fearefull vgly were, 180  
 Then all his former parts did earſt appere.  
 For hatred, murther, treaſon, and deſpight,  
 With many moe lay in ambuſhment there,  
 Awayting to entrap the wareleſſe wight,  
 Which did not them preuent with vigilant foreſight.

Thus / hauing paſt all perill, I was come  
 Within the compaſſe of that Iſlands ſpace ;  
 The which did ſeeme vnto my ſimple doome,  
 The onely pleaſant and delightfull place, 190  
 That euer troden was of footings trace.  
 For all that nature by her mother wit  
 Could frame in earth, and forme of ſubſtance baſe,  
 Was there, and all that nature did omit,  
 Art playing ſecond natures part, ſupplied it.

No tree, that is of count, in greenewood growes,  
 From loweſt Iuniper to Cedar tall,

l. 168, 'meaneſt' is misprinted 'neareſt' in '96: l. 179, (*whereof . . . tooke*): l. 194, (*playing . . . part*).

No flowre in field, that daintie odour throwes,  
 And deckes his branch with blossomes ouer all,  
 But there was planted, or grew naturall :  
 Nor sence of man so coy and curious nice, 200  
 But there mote find to please it selfe withall ;  
 Nor hart could wish for any queint deuice,  
 But there it present was, and did fraile sence entice.

In such luxurious plentie of all pleasure,  
 It seem'd a second paradife to gheffe,  
 So lauishly enricht with natures threasure,  
 That if the happie foules, which doe possesse  
 Th'Elyfian fields, and liue in lasting bleffe,  
 Should happen this with liuing eye to see,  
 They soone would loath their lesser happineffe, 210  
 And wish to life return'd againe to bee,  
 That in this ioyous place they mote haue ioyance free.

Fresh shadowes, fit to shroud from sunny ray ;  
 Faire lawnds, to take the sunne in season dew ;  
 Sweet springs, in which a thousand Nymphs did play ;  
 Soft rombling brookes, that gentle slomber drew ;/  
 High reared mounts, the lands about to vew ;  
 Low looking dales, disloignd from common gaze ;  
 Delightfull bowres, to solace louers trew ;  
 Falso Labyrinthes, fond runners eyes to daze ; 220  
 All which by nature made did nature selfe amaze.

And all without were walkes and all eyes dight,  
 With diuers trees, enrang'd in euen rankes ;  
 And here and there were pleasant arbors pight,  
 And shadie feates, and sundry flowring bankes,

l. 205, 'bee' (sic) : l. 211, 'gheffe' (sic)—the two words misplaced.

To fit and rest the walkers wearie shankes,  
 And therein thousand payres of louers walkt,  
 Praying their god, and yeelding him great thankes,  
 Ne euer ought but of their true loues talkt,  
 Ne euer for rebuke or blame of any balkt. 230

All these together by themselues did sport  
 Their spotlesse pleasures, and sweet loues content.  
 But farre away from these, another sort  
 Of louers lincked in true harts consent ;  
 Which loued not as these, for like intent,  
 But on chaste vertue grounded their desire,  
 Farre from all fraud, or fayned blandishment ;  
 Which in their spirits kindling zealous fire,  
 Braue thoughts and noble deedes did euermore aspire.

Such were great *Hercules*, and *Hyllus* deare ; 240  
 Trew *Ionathan*, and *Dauid* trustie tryde ;  
 Stout *Theseus*, and *Pirithous* his feare ;  
*Pylades* and *Orestes* by his fyde ;  
 Myld *Titus* and *Gesippus* without pryde ;  
*Damon* and *Pythias* whom death could not feuer ;  
 All these and all that euer had bene tyde,  
 In bands of friendship there did liue for euer,  
 Whose liues although decay'd, yet loues decayed neuer.

Which / when as I, that neuer tasted blis,  
 Nor happie howre, beheld with gazefull eye, 250  
 I thought there was none other heauen then this ;  
 And gan their endlesse happinesse enuye,  
 That being free from feare and gealosye,

l. 239, 'inspire' 1611 : l. 240, 'Hylus' : l. 242, 'Perithous.'

Might frankely there their loues defire poffesse ;  
 Whileft I through paines and perlous ieopardie,  
 Was forft to feeke my lifes deare patroneffe :  
 Much dearer be the things, which come through ha  
 diftreffe.

Yet all thofe fights, and all that elfe I faw,  
 Might not my fteps withhold, but that forthright  
 Vnto that purpofd place I did me draw, 26  
 Where as my loue was lodged day and night :  
 The temple of great *Venus*, that is hight  
 The Queene of beautie, and of loue the mother,  
 Where worfhipped of euery liuing wight ;  
 Whofe goodly workmanfhip farre paff all other  
 That euer were on earth, all were they fet together.

Not that fame famous Temple of *Diane*,  
 Whofe hight all *Ephesus* did ouerfee,  
 And which all *Asia* fought with vowes prophane,  
 One of the worlds feuen wonders fayd to bee, 27  
 Might match with this by many a degree :  
 Nor that, which that wife King of *Iurie* framed,  
 With endleffe coft, to be th'Almighties fee ;  
 Nor all that elfe through all the world is named  
 To all the heathen Gods, might like to this be clamed.

I much admyring that fo goodly frame,  
 Vnto the porch approcht, which open flood ;  
 But therein fate an amiable Dame,  
 That feem'd to be of very fober mood,/  
 And in her femblant shewed great womanhood : 28  
 Strange was her tyre ; for on her head a crowne  
 She wore much like vnto a Danifk hood.

Poudred with pearle and stone, and all her gowne  
Enwouen was with gold, that raught full low a downe.

On either side of her, two young men stood,  
Both strongly arm'd, as fearing one another ;  
Yet were they brethren both of halfe the blood,  
Begotten by two fathers of one mother,  
Though of contrarie natures each to other :  
The one of them hight *Loue*, the other *Hate*, 290  
*Hate* was the elder, *Loue* the younger brother ;  
Yet was the younger stronger in his state  
Then th'elder, and him maystered still in all debate.

Nathlesse that Dame so well them tempred both,  
That she them forced hand to ioyned hand,  
Albe that *Hatred* was thereto full loth,  
And turn'd his face away, as he did stand,  
Vnwillig to behold that louely band.  
Yet she was of such grace and vertuous might,  
That her commaundment he could not withstand, 300  
But bit his lip for felonous despight,  
And gnasht his yron tuskes at that displeasing fight.

*Concord* she cleeped was in common reed,  
Mother of blessed *Peace*, and *Friendship* trew ;  
They both her twins, both borne of heauenly seed,  
And she her selfe likewise diuinely grew ;  
The which right well her workes diuine did shew :  
For strength, and wealth, and happinesse she lends,  
And strife, and warre, and anger does subdew :  
Of litle much, of foes she maketh frends, 310  
And to afflicted minds sweet rest and quiet sends.



By / her the heauen is in his cource contained,  
 And all the world in state vnmoued stands,  
 As their Almighty maker first ordained,  
 And bound them with inuiolable bands ;  
 Elſe would the waters ouerflow the lands,  
 And fire deuoure the ayre, and hell them quight,  
 But that ſhe holds them with her bleſſed hands.  
 She is the nourſe of pleaſure and delight,  
 And vnto *Venus* grace the gate doth open right. 3 20

By her I entring halfe diſmayed was,  
 But ſhe in gentle wife me entertayned,  
 And twixt her ſelfe and loue did let me paſſe ;  
 But *Hatred* would my entrance haue reſtrayned,  
 And with his club me threatned to haue brayned,  
 Had not the Ladie with her powrefull ſpeech  
 Him from his wicked will vneath refrayned ;  
 And th'other eke his malice did empeach,  
 Till I was throughly paſt the perill of his reach.

Into the inmoſt Temple thus I came, 330  
 Which fuming all with frankincenſe I found,  
 And odours riſing from the altars flame.  
 Vpon an hundred marble pillors round  
 The rooſe vp high was reared from the ground,  
 All deckt with crownes, & chaynes, and girlands gay,  
 And thouſand pretious gifts worth many a pound,  
 The which fad louers for their vowes did pay ;  
 And all the ground was ſtrow'd with flowres, as freſh as  
 May.

l. 317, '*hell*'—Dr. Morris annotates here—" *hell* (ſo all copies). Some editors have ſuggeſted '*mell*'=confound ; but '*hell*'=O. E. hill or hele =cover, which agrees with its nominative '*waters*.'—'*And fire deuoure the ayre*'-is a parenthetical clause": l. 338, cap. M in may—accepted.

An hundred Altars round about were set,  
All flaming with their sacrifices fire, 340  
That with the steme thereof the Temple swet,  
Which rould in clouds to heauen did aspire, /  
And in them bore true louers vowes entire :  
And eke an hundred brasen caudrons bright,  
To bath in ioy and amorous desire,  
Euery of which was to a damzell hight ;  
For all the Priests were damzels, in soft linnen dight.

Right in the midst the Goddesse felse did stand  
Vpon an altar of some costly masse,  
Whose substance was vneath to vnderstand : 350  
For neither pretious stone, nor duresull brasfe,  
Nor shining gold, nor mouldring clay it was ;  
But much more rare and pretious to esteeme,  
Pure in aspect, and like to cristall glasse,  
Yet glasse was not, if one did rightly deeme,  
But being faire and brickle, likest glasse did seeme.

But it in shape and beautie did excell  
All other Idoles, which the heathen adore  
Farre passing that, which by surpassing skill  
*Phidias* did make in *Paphos* Isle of yore, 360  
With which that wretched Greeke, that life forlore  
Did fall in loue : yet this much fairer shined,  
But couered with a slender veile afore ;  
And both her feete and legs together twyned  
Were with a snake, whose head & tail were fast cōbyned.

The cause why she was couered with a vele,  
Was hard to know, for that her Priests the same  
From peoples knowledge labour'd to concele.  
But footh it was not fure for womanish shame,

Nor any blemish, which the worke mote blame ; 3 2  
 But for, they say, she hath both kinds in one,  
 Both male and female, both vnder one name :  
 She fyre and mother is her selfe alone,  
 Begets and eke conceiues, ne needeth other none.

And / all about her necke and shoulders flew  
 A flocke of litle loues, and sports, and ioyes,  
 With nimble wings of gold and purple hew ;  
 Whose shapes seem'd not like to terrestriall boyes,  
 But like to Angels playing heauenly toyes ;  
 The whilest their eldest brother was away, 3 2  
*Cupid* their eldest brother ; he enioyes  
 The wide kingdome of loue with Lordly sway,  
 And to his law compels all creatures to obay.

And all about her altar, scattered lay  
 Great sorts of louers piteously complayning,  
 Some of their losse, some of their loues delay,  
 Some of their pride, some paragons disdayning,  
 Some fearing fraud, some fraudulently fayning,  
 As euery one had cause of good or ill. (ni 1  
 Amongst the rest some one through loues constraine  
 Tormented fore, could not containe it still, 3 1  
 But thus brake forth, that all the temple it did fill.

Great *Venus*, Queene of beautie and of grace,  
 The ioy of Gods and men, that vnder skie  
 Doest fayrest shine, and most adorne thy place,  
 That with thy smyling looke doest pacifie  
 The raging seas, and makst the stormes to flie ;  
 Thee goddesse, thee the winds, the clouds doe feare,

l. 380, 'elder' : l. 384, , after 'altar'—accepted.

And when thou spredst thy mantle forth on hie,  
The waters play and pleasant lands appeare, 400  
And heauens laugh, & al the world shews ioyous cheare.

Then doth the dædale earth throw forth to thee  
Out of her fruitfull lap abundant flowres ;  
And then all liuing wights, soone as they see  
The spring breake forth out of his lusty bowres, /  
They all doe learne to play the Paramours ;  
First doe the merry birds, thy prety pages  
Priuily pricked with thy lustfull powres,  
Chirpe loud to thee out of their leauy cages,  
And thee their mother call to coole their kindly rages.

Then doe the saluage beasts begin to play 411  
Their pleasant friskes, and loath their wonted food ;  
The Lyons rore, the Tygres loudly bray,  
The raging Bulls rebellow through the wood,  
And breaking forth, dare tempt the deepest flood  
To come where thou doest draw them with desire :  
So all things else, that nourish vitall blood,  
Soone as with fury thou doest them inspire,  
In generation seeke to quench their inward fire.

So all the world by thee at first was made, 420  
And dayly yet thou doest the same repayre :  
Ne ought on earth that merry is and glad,  
Ne ought on earth that louely is and fayre,  
But thou the same for pleasure didst prepayre.  
Thou art the root of all that ioyous is,  
Great God of men and women, queene of th'ayre,

Mother of laughter, and wellspring of blisse,  
O graunt that of my loue at last I may not misse.

So did he say : but I with murmure soft,  
That none might heare the sorrow of my hart, 430  
Yet inly groning deepe and sighing oft,  
Besought her to graunt ease vnto my smart,  
And to my wound her gracious help impart.  
Whilest thus I spake, behold with happy eye  
I spyde, where at the Idoles feet apart  
A beuie of fayre damzels close did lye,  
Wayting when as the Antheme should be sung on hye.

The / first of them did seeme of ryper yeares,  
And grauer countenance then all the rest ;  
Yet all the rest were eke her equall pearces, 440  
Yet vnto her obeyed all the best.  
Her name was *VVomanhood*, that she exprest  
By her sad femblant and demeanure wyse :  
For stedfast still her eyes did fixed rest,  
Ne rov'd at randon after gazers guyse,  
Whose luring baytes oftymes doe heedlesse harts entye.

And next to her fate goodly *Shamefastnesse*,  
Ne euer durst her eyes from ground vpreare,  
Ne euer once did looke vp from her desse,  
As if some blame of euill she did feare, 450  
That in her cheekes made roses oft appeare :  
And her against sweet *Cherefulnesse* was placed,  
Whose eyes like twinkling stars in euening cleare,  
Were deckt with smyles, that all sad humors chased,  
And darted forth delights, the which her goodly graded.

nd next to her fate sober *Modestie*,  
 Holding her hand vpon her gentle hart ;  
 And her against fate comely *Curtesie*,  
 That vnto euery perfon knew her part ;  
 And her before was seated ouerthwart 460  
 Soft *Silence*, and submisse *Obedience*,  
 Both linckt together neuer to dispart,  
 Both gifts of God not gotten but from thence,  
 th girlonds of his Saints against their foes offence.

us fate they all around in seemely rate :  
 And in the midft of them a goodly mayd,  
 Euen in the lap of *VVomanhood* there fate,  
 The which was all in lilly white arayd, /  
 With filuer streames amongst the linnen stray'd ;  
 Like to the Morne, when first her shyning face 470  
 Hath to the gloomy world it selfe bewray'd,  
 That fame was fayrest *Amoret* in place,  
 yning with beauties light, and heauenly vertues  
 grace.

hom foone as I beheld, my hart gan throb,  
 And wade in doubt, what best were to be donne :  
 For sacrilege me seem'd the Church to rob,  
 And folly seem'd to leaue the thing vndonne,  
 Which with so strong attempt I had begonne.  
 Tho shaking off all doubt and shamefast feare,  
 Which Ladies loue I heard had neuer wonne 480  
 Mongst men of worth, I to her stepped neare,  
 id by the lilly hand her labour'd vp to reare.

. 464, 'girlonds'—sic in all: Church suggests 'gardiens,' Collier  
 urdons.'

Thereat that formost matrone me did blame,  
 And sharpe rebuke, for being ouer bold ;  
 Saying it was to Knight vnseemely shame,  
 Vpon a recluse Virgin to lay hold,  
 That vnto *Venus* seruices was sold.  
 To whom I thus, Nay but it fitteth best,  
 For *Cupids* man with *Venus* mayd to hold,  
 For ill your goddesse seruices are drest 490  
 By virgins, and her sacrifices let to rest.

With that my shield I forth to her did shew,  
 Which all that while I clofely had conceald ;  
 On which when *Cupid* with his killing bow,  
 And cruell shafts emblazond she beheld,  
 At fight thereof she was with terror queld,  
 And said no more : but I which all that while  
 The pledge of faith, her hand engaged held,  
 Like warie Hynd within the weedie foyle,  
 For no intreatie would forgoe so glorious spoyle. 500

And / euermore vpon the Goddesse face  
 Mine eye was fixt, for feare of her offence :  
 Whom when I saw with amiable grace  
 To laugh on me, and fauour my pretence,  
 I was emboldned with more confidence ;  
 And nought for nicenesse nor for enuy sparing,  
 In prefence of them all forth led her thence :  
 All looking on, and like astonisht staring,  
 Yet to lay hand on her, not one of all them daring.

l. 499, '*warie*'—Church and Upton would read '*wearie*' : l. 502, : *for*,  
 —accepted : l. 504, '*on*' for '*at*' of '96—accepted : l. 505, ; for ,—*ac-*  
 cepted : l. 507, : substituted for , .

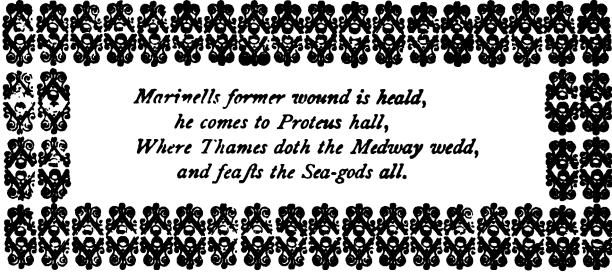
She often prayd, and often me besought, 510  
Sometime with tender teares to let her goe,  
Sometime with witching smyles : but yet for nought,  
That euer she to me could say or doe,  
Could she her wished freedome fro me wooe ;  
But forth I led her through the Temple gate,  
By which I hardly past with much adoe :  
But that same Ladie which me friended late  
In entrance, did me also friend in my retrate.

No lesse did Daunger threaten me with dread,  
When as he saw me, maugre all his powre, 520  
That glorious spoyle of beautie with me lead,  
Then *Cerberus*, when *Orpheus* did recoure  
His Lemman from the Stygian Princes boure.  
But euermore my shield did me defend,  
Against the storme of euery dreadfull stoure :  
Thus safely with my loue I thence did wend.  
So ended he his tale, where I this Canto end.

l. 519, capital D—our correction in '*daunger*.' So too p. 213, ll. 33, 34, in '*Horror*' and '*Darknesse*.'



## Cant. XI.



*Marinells former wound is heald,  
he comes to Proteus hall,  
Where Thames doth the Medway wedd,  
and feasts the Sea-gods all.*

**B** Vt ah for pittie that I haue thus long  
Left a fayre Ladie languishing in payne :  
Now well away, that I haue doen such wrong,  
To let faire *Florimell* in bands remayne,  
In bands of loue, and in sad thraldomes chayne ; 10  
From which vnlesse some heauenly powre her free  
By miracle, not yet appearing playne,  
She lenger yet is like captiu'd to bee :  
That even to thinke thereof, it inly pitties mee.

Here neede you to remember, how erewhile  
Vnlouely *Proteus*, missing to his mind  
That Virgins loue to win by wit or wile,  
Her threw into a dongeon deepe and blind,  
And there in chaynes her cruelly did bind,  
In hope thereby her to his bent to draw : 20  
For when as neither gifts nor graces kind  
Her constant mind could moue at all he saw,  
He thought her to compell by crueltie and awe.

Deepe in the bottome of an huge great rocke  
 The dongeon was, in which her bound he left,  
 That neither yron barres, nor brasen locke  
 Did neede to gard from force, or secret theft  
 Of / all her louers, which would her haue reft.  
 For wall'd it was with waues, which rag'd and ror'd  
 As they the cliffe in peeces would haue cleft ; 30  
 Besides ten thoufand monfters foule abhor'd  
 Did waite about it, gaping grielſy, all begor'd.

And in the midſt thereof did Horror dwell,  
 And Darkeneſſe dredd, that neuer viewed day,  
 Like to the balefull houſe of loweſt hell,  
 In which old *Styx* her aged bones alway,  
 Old *Styx* the Grandame of the Gods, doth lay.  
 There did this luckleſſe mayd ſeuē months abide,  
 Ne euer euening ſaw, ne mornings ray,  
 Ne euer from the day the night deſcride, 40  
 But thought it all one night, that did no houres diuide.

And all this was for loue of *Marinell*,  
 Who her deſpyfd (ah who would her deſpyſe ?)  
 And wemens loue did from his hart expell,  
 And all thoſe ioyes that weake mankind entyfe.  
 Nathleſſe his pride full dearely he did pryſe ;  
 For of a womans hand it was ywroke,  
 That of the wound he yet in languor lyes,  
 Ne can be cured of that cruell ſtroke  
 Which *Britomart* him gaue, when he did her prouoke.

Yet farre and neare the Nymph his mother fought, 51  
 And many falues did to his fore applie,

l. 32, , after '*grielſy*'—accepted : l. 34, '*arad*' : l. 37, misprinted '*Gram-*  
*danie*' '96 : *ib.* (*Old . . . Gods*) : l. 38, '*threē*.'

And many herbes did vse. But when as nought  
 She saw could ease his rankling maladie,  
 At last to *Tryphon* she for helpe did hie,  
 (This *Tryphon* is the seagods surgeon hight)  
 Whom she besought to find some remedie :  
 And for his paines a whistle him beight  
 That of a fishes shell was wrought with rare delight. /

So well that Leach did hearke to her request, 60  
 And did so well employ his carefull paine,  
 That in short space his hurts he had redrest,  
 And him restor'd to healthfull state againe :  
 In which he long time after did remaine  
 There with the Nymph his mother, like her thrall ;  
 Who fore against his will did him retaine,  
 For feare of perill, which to him mote fall,  
 Through his too ventrous prowesse proued ouer all.

It fortun'd then, a solemne feast was there  
 To all the Sea-gods and their fruitfull seede, 70  
 In honour of the spoufalls, which then were  
 Betwixt the *Medway* and the *Thames* agreed.  
 Long had the *Thames* (as we in records reed)  
 Before that day her wooed to his bed ;  
 But the proud Nymph would for no worldly meed,  
 Nor no entreatie to his loue be led ;  
 Till now at last relenting, she to him was wed.

So both agreed, that this their bridale feast  
 Should for the Gods in *Proteus* house be made ;  
 To which they all repayr'd, both most and least, 80  
 Aswell which in the mightie Ocean trade,  
 As that in riuers swim, or brookes doe wade.

All which not if an hundred tongues to tell,  
 And hundred mouthes, and voice of brasse I had,  
 And endlesse memorie, that mote excell,  
 In order as they came, could I recount them well.

Helpe therefore, O thou sacred imp of *Ioue*,  
 The nourling of Dame *Memorie* his deare,  
 To whom those rolles, layd vp in heauen aboue,  
 And records of antiquitie appeare, 90  
 To / which no wit of man may comen neare ;  
 Helpe me to tell the names of all those floods,  
 And all those Nymphes, which then assembled were  
 To that great banquet of the watry Gods,  
 And all their fundry kinds, and all their hid abodes.

First came great *Neptune* with his threeforkt mace,  
 That rules the Seas, and makes them rise or fall ;  
 His dewy lockes did drop with brine apace,  
 Vnder his Diademe imperiall :  
 And by his side his Queene with coronall, 100  
 Faire *Amphitrite*, most diuinely faire,  
 Whose yuorie shoulders weren couered all,  
 As with a robe, with her owne filuer haire,  
 And deckt with pearles, which th'Indian seas for her pre-  
 paire.

These marched farre afore the other crew ;  
 And all the way before them as they went,  
*Triton* his trompet shrill before them blew,  
 For goodly triumph and great iollyment,  
 That made the rockes to roare, as they were rent.  
 And after them the royall issue came, 110  
 Which of them sprung by lineall descent :

First the Sea-gods, which to themfelues doe clame  
The powre to rule the billowes, and the waues to tame.

*Phorcys*, the father of that fatall brood,  
By whom thofe old Heroes wonne fuch fame ;  
And *Glaucus*, that wife fouthfayes vnderftood ;  
And tragicke *Inoes* fonne, the which became  
A God of feas through his mad mothers blame,  
Now hight *Palemon*, and is faylers frend ;  
Great *Brontes*, and *Astræus*, that did fhame 12 0  
Himfelfe with inceft of his kin vnkend ;  
And huge *Orion*, that doth tempefts ftill portend. /

The rich *Cteatus*, and *Eurytus* long ;  
*Neleus* and *Pelias* louely brethren both ;  
Mightie *Chryfaor*, and *Caicus* ftong ;  
*Eurypulus*, that calmes the waters wrath ;  
And faire *Euphæmus*, that vpon them go'th  
As on the ground, without difmay or dread :  
Fierce *Eryx*, and *Alebius* that know'th  
The waters depth, and doth their bottome tread ; 1 30  
And fad *Afopus*, comely with his hoarie head.

There alfo fome moft famous founders were  
Of puiffant Nations, which the world poffeft ;  
Yet fonnes of *Neptune*, now affembled here :  
Ancient *Ogyges*, euen th'auncienteft,  
And *Inachus* renowmd aboue the reft ;  
*Phænix*, and *Aon*, and *Pelafgus* old,  
Great *Belus*, *Phæax*, and *Agenor* beft ;  
And mightie *Albion*, father of the bold  
And warlike people, which the *Britaine* Iflands hold.

l. 117, see Glossary, s.n. : l. 127, 'go'th' for 'goth'—accepted.

For *Albion* the sonne of *Neptune* was,  
 Who for the prooue of his great puiſſance,  
 Out of his *Albion* did on dry-foot pas  
 Into old *Gall*, that now is cleeped *France*,  
 To fight with *Hercules*, that did aduance  
 To vanquiſh all the world with matchleſſe might,  
 And there his mortall part by great miſchance  
 Was ſlaine : but that which is th'immortall ſpright  
 Liues ſtill : and to this feaſt with *Neptunes* ſeed was dight.

But what doe I their names feeke to reherſe, 150  
 Which all the world haue with their iſſue fild ?  
 How can they all in this ſo narrow verſe  
 Contayned be, and in ſmall compaſſe hild ?  
 Let / them record them, that are better ſkild,  
 And know the moniments of paſſed times :  
 Onely what needeth, ſhall be here fulfilde,  
 T'expreſſe ſome part of that great equipage,  
 Which from great *Neptune* do deriue their parentage.

Next came the aged *Ocean*, and his Dame,  
 Old *Tethys*, th'oldeſt two of all the reſt ; 160  
 For all the reſt of thoſe two parents came,  
 Which afterward both ſea and land poſſeſt :  
 Of all which *Nereus* th'eldeſt, and the beſt,  
 Did firſt proceed, then which none more vpright,  
 Ne more ſincere in word and deed profeſt ;  
 Moſt voide of guile, moſt free from fowle deſpight,  
 Doing him ſelfe, and teaching others to doe right.

There to he was expert in prophecies,  
 And could the ledden of the Gods vnfold,

l. 155, '*times*'—after a long interval, another of Spenser's neglects in rhyme-word, which should be '*age*' of course : l. 160, ; for,—accepted.

Through which, when *Paris* brought his famous prise  
 The faire *Tindarid* lasse, he him fortold, 171  
 That her all *Greece* with many a champion bold  
 Should fetch againe, and finally destroy  
 Proud *Priams* towne. So wise is *Nereus* old,  
 And so well skild ; nathlesse he takes great ioy  
 Oft-times amōgst the wanton Nymphs to sport and toy.

And after him the famous riuers came,  
 Which doe the earth enrich and beautifie :  
 The fertile Nile, which creatures new doth frame ;  
 Long Rhodanus, whose sourse springs from the skie ;  
 Faire Ister, flowing from the mountaines hie ; 181  
 Diuine Scamander, purpled yet with blood  
 Of Greekes and Troians, which therein did die ;  
 Paetolus, gliftring with his golden flood,  
 And Tygris fierce, whose streames of none may be with-  
 flood. /

Great Ganges, and immortall Euphrates,  
 Deepe Indus, and Mæander intricate,  
 Slow Peneus, and tempestuous Phafides,  
 Swift Rhene, and Alpheus still immaculate :  
 Ooraxes, feared for great *Cyrus* fate ; 190  
 Tybris, renowned for the Romaines fame,  
 Rich Oranochy, though but knowen late ;  
 And that huge Riuer, which doth beare his name  
 Of warlike Amazons, which doe possesse the fame.

Ioy on those warlike women, which so long  
 Can from all men so rich a kingdome hold ;

1. 184, , after '*Paetolus*'—accepted.

And shame on you, *o* men, which boast your strong  
 And valiant hearts, in thoughts lesse hard and bold,  
 Yet quaille in conquest of that land of gold.  
 But this to you, *o* Britons, most pertaines, 200  
 To whom the right hereof it selfe hath fold ;  
 The which for sparing litle cost or paines,  
 Use so immortall glory, and so endlesse gaines.

Then was there heard a most celestiall sound,  
 Of dainty musicke, which did next ensue  
 Before the spouse : that was *Arion* crownd ;  
 Who playing on his harpe, vnto him drew  
 The eares and hearts of all that goodly crew,  
 That euen yet the Dolphin, which him bore  
 Through the Agæan seas from Pirates vew, 210  
 Stood still by him astonisht at his lore,  
 And all the raging seas for ioy forgot to rore.

Then went he playing on the watery plaine.  
 Soone after whom the louely Bridegroome came,  
 The noble *Thamis*, with all his goodly traine,  
 But him before there went, as best became  
 His / auncient parents, namely th'auncient *Thame*.  
 But much more aged was his wife then he,  
 The *Ouze*, whom men doe *Ifis* rightly name ;  
 Full weake and crooked creature seemed shee,  
 And almost blind through eld, that scarce her way could  
 see.

Wherefore on either side she was sustained  
 Of two smal grooms, which by their names were hight  
 The *Churne*, and *Charwell*, two small streames, which  
 Them felues her footing to direct aright, (pained



Which fayled oft through faint and feeble plight :  
 But *Thame* was stronger, and of better stay ;  
 Yet seem'd full aged by his outward fight,  
 With head all hoary, and his beard all gray,  
 Deawed with filuer drops, that trickled downe alway.

And eke he somewhat seem'd to stoupe afore 231  
 With bowed backe, by reason of the lode,  
 And auncient heauy burden, which he bore  
 Of that faire City, wherein make abode  
 So many learned impes, that shoote abroad,  
 And with their braunches spred all Britany,  
 No lesse then' do her elder sisters broode.  
 Ioy to you both, ye double nourfery,  
 Of Arts, but Oxford thine doth *Thame* most glorify.

But he their sonne full fresh and iolly was, 240  
 All decked in a robe of watchet hew,  
 On which the waues, glittering like Chrifall glas,  
 So cunningly enwouen were, that few  
 Could weenen, whether they were false or trew.  
 And on his head like to a Coronet  
 He wore, that seemed strange to common vew,  
 In which were many towres and castels set,  
 That it encompass round as with a golden fret. /

Like as the mother of the Gods, they say,  
 In her great iron charet wonts to ride, 250  
 When to *Ioues* pallace she doth take her way ;  
 Old *Cybele*, arayd with pompous pride,  
 Wearing a Diademe embattild wide  
 With hundred turrets, like a Turribant.  
 With such an one was *Thamis* beautifide ;

l. 234, 'make-abode.'

That was to weete the famous Troyenant,  
which her kingdomes throne is chiefly reliant.

d round about him many a pretty Page  
Attended duely, ready to obey ;  
All little Riuers, which owe vassallage 260  
To him, as to their Lord, and tribute pay :  
The chaulky Kenet, and the Thetis gray,  
The morish Cole, and the soft sliding Breane,  
The wanton Lee, that oft doth loofe his way,  
And the still Darent, in whose waters cleane  
n thousand fishes play, and decke his pleasant streame.

en came his neighbour fouds, which nigh him dwell,  
And water all the English soile throughout ;  
They all on him this day attended well ;  
And with meet seruice waited him about ; 270  
Ne none disdained low to him to lout :  
No not the stately Seuerne grudg'd at all,  
Ne storming Humber, though he looked stout ;  
But both him honor'd as their principall,  
nd let their swelling waters low before him fall.

here was the speedy Tamar, which deuides  
The Cornish and the Deuonish confines ;  
Through both whose borders swiftly downe it glides,  
And meeting Plim, to Plimmouth thence declines :  
And Dart, nigh chockt with sands of tinny mines.  
But Auon marched in more stately path, 281  
Proud of his Adamants, with which he shines  
And glisters wide, as alf' of wondrous Bath,  
ad Bristow faire, which on his waues he builded hath.

1. 280, 'choakt.'

And there came Stoure with terrible aspect,  
 Bearing his fixe deformed heads on hye,  
 That doth his course through Blandford plains direct,  
 And washeth Winborne meades in season drye.  
 Next him went Wylibourne with passage flye,  
 That of his wylineffe his name doth take, =90  
 And of him selfe doth name the shire thereby;  
 And Mole, that like a nousling Mole doth make  
 His way still vnder ground, till Thamis he ouertake.

Then came the Rother, decked all with woods  
 Like a wood God, and flowing fast to Rhy:  
 And Sture, that parteth with his pleasant floods  
 The Easterne Saxons from the Southerne ny,  
 And Clare, and Harwitch both doth beautify:  
 Him follow'd Yar, soft washing Norwitch wall,  
 And with him brought a present ioyfully =300  
 Of his owne fish vnto their festiuall, (call.  
 Whose like none else could shew, the which they Rus fins

Next these the plenteous Ouse came far from land,  
 By many a city, and by many a towne,  
 And many riuers taking vnder hand  
 Into his waters, as he passeth downe,  
 The Cle, the Were, the Grant, the Sture, the Rowne.  
 Thence doth by Huntingdon and Cambridge flit;  
 My mother Cambridge, whom as with a Crowne  
 He doth adorne, and is adorn'd of it 310  
 With many a gentle Muse, and many a learned wit. /

And after him the fatall Welland went,  
 That if old sawes proue true (which God forbid)

l. 307, '*Guant*' in '96, 1609, etc.—Professor Child first suggested '*Grant*', which I accept; but see Glossary, s.v. : l. 308; for ,.

Shall drowne all Holland with his excrement,  
And shall see Stamford, though now homely hid,  
Then shine in learning, more then euer did  
Cambridge or Oxford, Englands goodly beames.  
And next to him the *Nene* downe softly slid ;  
And bounteous Trent, that in him selfe enfeames  
Both thirty fots of fish, and thirty fundry streames. 320

Next these came Tyne, along whose stony bancke  
That Romaine Monarch built a brazen wall,  
Which mote the feebled Britons strongly flanke  
Against the Piets, that swarmed ouer all,  
Which yet thereof Gualfeuer they doe call :  
And Twede the limit betwixt Logris land  
And Albany : And Eden though but small,  
Yet often staine with blood of many a band  
Of Scots and English both, that tyned on his strand.

Then came those fixe sad brethren, like forlorne, 330  
That whilome were (as antique fathers tell)  
Sixe valiant Knights, of one faire Nymphe yborne,  
Which did in noble deedes of armes excell,  
And wonned there, where now Yorke people dwell ;  
Still Vre, swift Werfe, and Oze the most of might,  
High Swale, vnquiet Nide, and troublous Skell ;  
All whom a Scythian king, that Humber hight,  
Slew cruelly, and in the riuer drowned quight.

But past not long, ere *Brutus* warlicke sonne  
*Locrinus* them aueng'd, and the same date, 340  
Which the proud Humber vnto them had donne,  
By equall dome repayd on his owne pate :

For / in the felse fame riuer, where he late  
 Had drenched them, he drowned him againe ;  
 And nam'd the riuer of his wretched fate ;  
 Whose bad condition yet it doth retaine,  
 Oft tossed with his stormes, which therein still remaine.

These after, came the stony shallow Lone,  
 That to old Loncafter his name doth lend ;  
 And following Dee, which Britons long ygone 350  
 Did call diuine, that doth by Chester tend ;  
 And Conway which out of his streame doth fend  
 Plenty of pearles to decke his dames withall,  
 And Lindus that his pikes doth most commend,  
 Of which the auncient Lincolne men doe call :  
 All these together marched toward *Proteus* hall.

Ne thence the Irishe Riuers absent were :  
 Sith no lesse famous then the rest they bee,  
 And ioyne in neighbourhood of kingdome nere,  
 Why should they not likewise in loue agree, 360  
 And ioy likewise this solemne day to see ?  
 They saw it all, and present were in place ;  
 Though I them all according their degree,  
 Cannot recount, nor tell their hidden race,  
 Nor read the saluage cūtreis, thorough which they pace.

There was the Liffy rolling downe the lea,  
 The sandy Slane, the stony Aubrian,  
 The spacious Shenan spreading like a sea,  
 The pleasant Boyne, the fishy fruitfull Ban,  
 Swift Awniduff, which of the English man 370  
 Is cal'de Blacke water, and the Liffar deep,  
 Sad Trowis, that once his people ouerran,

l. 355, : substituted for , ; and so l. 357 : l. 361, ? for .

Strong *Allo* tomling from Slewlogher steep,  
And *Mulla* mine, whose waues I whilom taught to weep./

And there the three renowned brethren were,  
Which that great Gyant *Blomius* begot,  
Of the faire Nymph *Rheufa* wandring there.  
One day, as she to shunne the season whot,  
Vnder Slewbloome in shady groue was got,  
This Gyant found her, and by force deflowr'd : 380  
Whereof<sup>1</sup> conceiuing, she in time forth brought  
These three faire sons, which being thence forth powrd  
In three great riuers ran, and many countreis scowrd.

The first, the gentle Shure, that making way  
By sweet Clonmell, adornes rich Waterford ;  
The next, the stubborne Newre, whose waters gray  
By faire Kilkenny and Rosseponte boord ;  
The third, the goodly Barow, which doth hoord  
Great heapes of Salmons in his deepe bosome :  
All which long fundred, doe at last accord 390  
To ioyne in one, ere to the sea they come,  
So flowing all from one, all one at last become.

There also was the wide embayed Mayre,  
The pleasaunt Bandon crownd with many a wood,  
The spreading Lee, that like an Island fayre  
Encloseth Corke with his deuided flood ;  
And balefull Oure, late staine with English blood :  
With many more, whose names no tongue can tell.  
All which that day in order seemly good  
Did on the Thamis attend, and waited well 400  
To doe their duefull seruice, as to them befell.

1. 378, 'hot': l. 380, : for, —accepted : l. 384, , after 'Shure' —accepted :  
l. 387, ; for, —accepted.

Then came the Bride, the louely *Medua* came,  
 Clad in a vesture of vnknown geare,  
 And vncouth fashion, yet her well became ;  
 That seemd like siluer, sprinckled here and theare  
 With / glittering spangs, that did like starres appeare,  
 And wau'd vpon, like water Chamelot,  
 To hide the metall, which yet euery where  
 Bewrayd it selfe, to let men plainly wot,  
 It was no mortall worke, that seem'd and yet was not.

Her goodly lockes adowne her backe did flow 411  
 Vnto her waste, with flowres bescattered,  
 The which ambrosiall odours forth did throw  
 To all about, and all her shoulders spred  
 As a new spring ; and likewise on her hed  
 A Chapelet of fundry flowers she wore,  
 From vnder which the deawy humour shed,  
 Did tricle downe her haire, like to the hore  
 Congealed litle drops, which doe the morne adore.

On her two pretty handmaides did attend, 420  
 One cald the *Theise*, the other cald the *Crane* ;  
 Which on her waited, things amisse to mend,  
 And both behind vpheld her spredding traine ;  
 Vnder the which, her feet appeared plaine,  
 Her siluer feet, faire washt against this day :  
 And her before there paced Pages twaine,  
 Both clad in colours like, and like array,  
 The *Doune* & eke the *Frith*, both which prepard her way

And after these the Sea Nymphs marched all,  
 All goodly damzels, deckt with long greene haire,

Whom of their fire *Nereides* men call, 431  
 All which the Oceans daughter to him bare  
 The gray eyde *Doris*: all which fifty are ;  
 All which she there on her attending had.  
 Swift *Proto*, milde *Eucrate*, *Thetis* faire,  
 Soft *Spio*, sweete *Eudore*, *Sao* sad,  
 Light *Doto*, wanton *Glauce*, and *Galene* glad. /

White hand *Eunica*, proud *Dynamene*,  
 Ioyous *Thalia*, goodly *Amphitrite*,  
 Louely *Pasithee*, kinde *Eulimene*, 440  
 Light foote *Cymothoe*, and sweete *Melite*,  
 Fairest *Pherusa*, *Phao* lilly white,  
 Wondred *Agauē*, *Poris*, and *Nesēa*,  
 With *Erato* that doth in loue delite,  
 And *Panopæ*, and wife *Protomedæa*,  
 And snowy neckd *Doris*, and milkewhite *Galathæa*.

Speedy *Hippothoe*, and chaste *Aclea*,  
 Large *Lisianassa*, and *Pronæa* sage,  
*Euagore*, and light *Pontoporea*,  
 And she, that with her least word can assuage 450  
 The furring seas, when they do forest rage,  
*Cymodoce*, and stout *Autonoe*,  
 And *Neso*, and *Eione* well in age,  
 And seeming still to smile, *Glaucanome*,  
 And she that hight of many heastes *Polynome*,  
 Fresh *Alimeda*, deckt with girlond greene ;  
*Hypponeo*, with salt bedewed wrefts :  
*Laomedea*, like the christall sheene ;  
*Liagore*, much praisd for wife behests ;

<sup>1</sup> 436, '*Eudore*'—Professor Childs' correction of '*Endore*' 1596, 1609,  
 tc.



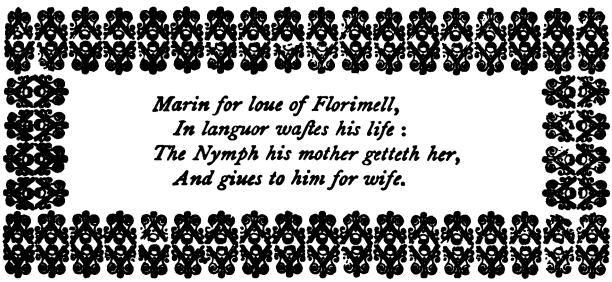
And *Pfamathe*, for her brode snowy brefts ;      460  
*Cymo*, *Eupompe*, and *Themiste* iust ;  
 And she that vertue loues and vice detests  
*Euarna*, and *Menippe* true in trust,  
 And *Nemertea* learned well to rule her lust.

All these the daughters of old *Nereus* were,  
 Which haue the sea in charge to them affinde,  
 To rule his tides, and farges to vprere,  
 To bring forth stormes, or fast them to vpbinde.  
 And / sailers saue from wreckes of wrathfull winde.  
 And yet besides three thousand more there were  
 Of th'Oceans feede, but *Ioues* and *Phæbus* kinde ;  
 The which in floods and fountaines doe appere, 47 2  
 And all mankinde do nourish with their waters clere.

The which, more eath it were for mortall wight,  
 To tell the sands, or count the starres on hye,  
 Or ought more hard, then thinke to reckon right.  
 But well I wote, that these which I descry,  
 Were present at this great solemnity :  
 And there amongst the rest, the mother was  
 Of luckeleffe *Marinell Cymodoce*,      48  
 Which, for my Muse her selfe now tyred has,  
 Vnto an other Canto I will ouerpas.

1. 471, 'but'—sic '96, 1609, 1611, etc.—some would read 'both.'

## Cant. XII.



*Marin for loue of Florimell,  
In languor wastes his life :  
The Nymph his mother getteth her,  
And giues to him for wife.*

O What an endlesse worke haue I in hand,  
To count the seas abundant progeny,  
Whose fruitfull feede farre passeth those in land,  
And also those which wonne in th'azure sky ?  
For much more eath to tell the starres on hy, 10  
Albe they endlesse seeme in estimation,  
Then to recount the Seas posterity :  
So fertile be the floods in generation,  
o huge their numbers, and so numberlesse their nation. /

hencefore the antique wifards well inuented,  
That *Venus* of the fomy sea was bred ;  
For that the seas by her are most augmented.  
Witnesse th'exceeding fry, which there are fed,  
And wondrous sholes, which may of none be red.  
Then blame me not, if I haue err'd in count 20  
Of Gods, of Nymphs, of riuers yet vnred :  
For though their numbers do much more surmount,  
et all those same were there, which erst I did recount.

All those were there, and many other more,  
 Whose names and nations were too long to tell,  
 That *Proteus* house they fild euen to the dore ;  
 Yet were they all in order, as befell,  
 According their degrees disposed well.  
 Amongst the rest, was faire *Cymodoce*,  
 The mother of vnlucky *Marinell*,  
 Who thither with her came, to learne and see  
 The manner of the Gods when they at banquet bee.

But for he was halfe mortall, being bred  
 Of mortall fire, though of immortall wombe,  
 He might not with immortall food be fed,  
 Ne with th'eternall Gods to banquet come ;  
 But walkt abrode, and round about did rome,  
 To view the building of that vncouth place,  
 That seem'd vnlike vnto his earthly home :  
 Where, as he to and fro by chaunce did trace,  
 There vnto him betid a difauentrous case.

Vnder the hanging of an hideous clieffe,  
 He heard the lamentable voice of one,  
 That piteously complaind her carefull grieffe,  
 Which neuer she before disclofd to none,  
 But / to her selfe her sorrow did bemone.  
 So feelingly her case she did complaine,  
 That ruth it moued in the rocky stone,  
 And made it seeme to feele her grievous pain  
 And oft to grone with billowes beating from th

Though vaine I see my forrowes to vnfold,  
 And count my cares, when none is nigh to

Yet hoping grieve may lessen being told,  
I will them tell though vnto no man neare :  
For heauen that vnto all lends equall eare,  
Is farre from hearing of my heauy plight ;  
And lowest hell, to which I lie most neare,  
Cares not what euils hap to wretched wight ;  
And greedy seas doe in the spoile of life delight.

Yet loe the seas I see by often beating, 60  
Doe pearce the rockes, and hardest marble weares ;  
But his hard rocky hart for no entreating  
Will yeeld, but when my piteous plaints he heares,  
Is hardned more with my abundant teares.  
Yet though he neuer lift to me relent,  
But let me waste in woe my wretched yeares,  
Yet will I neuer of my loue repent,  
But ioy that for his sake I suffer prifonment.

And when my weary ghost with grieve outworne, 70  
By timely death shall winne her wished rest,  
Let then this plaint vnto his eares be borne,  
That blame it is to him, that armes profest,  
To let her die, whom he might haue redrest.  
There did she pause, inforced to giue place,  
Vnto the passion, that her heart opprest,  
And after she had wept and wail'd a space,  
She gan afresh thus to renew her wretched case. /

Ye Gods of seas, if any Gods at all  
Haue care of right, or ruth of wretches wrong, 80  
By one or other way me woefull thrall,  
Deliuer hence out of this dungeon strong,  
In which I daily dying am too long.

And if ye deeme me death for louing one,  
 That loues not me, then doe it not prolong,  
 But let me die and end my daies attone,  
 And let him liue vnlou'd, or loue him felse alone.

But if that life ye vnto me decree,  
 Then let mee liue, as louers ought to do,  
 And of my lifes deare loue beloued be :  
 And if he shall through pride your doome vndo, 90  
 Do you by duresse him compell thereto,  
 And in this prifon put him here with me :  
 One prifon fitteft is to hold vs two :  
 So had I rather to be thrall, then free ;  
 Such thraldome or fuch freedome let it furely be.

But ô vaine iudgement, and condition's vaine,  
 The which the prifoner points vnto the free ;  
 The whiles I him condemne, and deeme his paine,  
 He where he lift goes loofe, and laughs at me.  
 So euer loofe, fo euer happy be. 100  
 But where fo loofe or happy that thou art,  
 Know *Marinell* that all this is for thee.  
 With that ſhe wept and wail'd, as if her hart (ſmart.  
 Would quite haue burſt through great abundance of her

All which complaint when *Marinell* had heard,  
 And vnderſtood the cauſe of all her care  
 To come of him, for vſing her ſo hard,  
 His ſtubborne heart, that neuer felt miſfare  
 Was / toucht with ſoft remorse and pittie rare ;  
 That euen for griefe of minde he oft did grone, 110  
 And inly wiſh, that in his powre it weare

l. 97, ; substituted for comma, and ! of 1609.

Her to redresse : but since he meanes found none  
He could no more but her great misery bemone.

Thus whilst his stony heart with tender ruth  
Was toucht, and mighty courage mollifide,  
Dame *Venus* sonne that tameth stubborne youth  
With iron bit, and maketh him abide,  
Till like a victor on his backe he ride,  
Into his mouth his maystring bridle threw,  
That made him stoupe, till he did him bestride : 120  
Then gan he make him tread his steps anew,  
And learne to loue, by learning louers paines to rew.

Now gan he in his grieued minde deuise,  
How from that dungeon he might her enlarge ;  
Some while he thought, by faire and humble wife  
To *Proteus* selfe to sue for her discharge :  
But then he fear'd his mothers former charge  
Gainst womens loue, long giuen him in vaine.  
Then gan he thinke, perforce with sword and targe  
Her forth to fetch, and *Proteus* to constraîne : 130  
But soone he gan such folly to forthinke againe.

Then did he cast to steale her thence away,  
And with him beare, where none of her might know.  
But all in vaine : for why he found no way  
To enter in, or issue forth below :  
For all about that rocke the sea did flow.  
And though vnto his will she giuen were,  
Yet without ship or bote her thence to row,  
He wist not how her thence away to bere ;  
And daunger well he wist long to continue there. / 140

l. 114, 'was toucht' before 'with' : l. 115, 'And mighty courage something.'

At last when as no meanes he could inuent,  
 Backe to him selfe, he gan returne the blame,  
 That was the author of her punishment ;  
 And with vile curses, and reprochfull shame  
 To damne him selfe by euery euill name ;  
 And deeme vnworthy or of loue or life,  
 That had despisde so chaste and faire a dame,  
 Which him had fought through trouble & lōg strife ;  
 Yet had refufde a God that her had fought to wife.

In this sad plight he walked here and there, 150  
 And romed round about the rocke in vaine,  
 As he had lost him selfe, he wist not where ;  
 Oft listning if he mote her heare againe ;  
 And still bemoning her vnworthy paine.  
 Like as an Hynde whose calfe is false vnwares  
 Into some pit, where she him heares complaine,  
 An hundred times about the pit side fares,  
 Right sorrowfully mourning her bereaued cares.

And now by this the feast was thoroughly ended,  
 And euery one gan homeward to resort. 160  
 Which seeing *Marinell*, was sore offended,  
 That his departure thence should be so short,  
 And leaue his loue in that sea-walled fort.  
 Yet durst he not his mother disobay,  
 But her attending in full seemly fort,  
 Did march amongst the many all the way :  
 And all the way did inly mourne, like one astray.

Being returned to his mothers bowre,  
 In solitary silence far from wight,  
 He gan record the lamentable stowre, 170  
 In which his wretched loue lay day and night,

For / his deare fake, that ill deferu'd that plight :  
The thought whereof empierft his hart fo deepe,  
That of no worldly thing he tooke delight ;  
Ne dayly food did take, ne nightly sleepe,  
But pyn'd, & mourn'd, & languisht, and alone did weepe.

That in short fpace his wonted chearefull hew  
Gan fade, and liuely fpirits deaded quight :  
His cheeke bones raw, and eie-pits hollow grew,  
And brawney armes had loft their knownen might,  
That nothing like himfelfe he seem'd in fight. 181  
Ere long fo weake of limbe, and ficke of loue  
He woxe, that lenger he note stand vpriht,  
But to his bed was brought, and layd aboue,  
Like ruefull ghofst, vnable once to firre or moue.

Which when his mother faw, fhe in her mind  
Was troubled fore, ne wift well what to weene,  
Ne could by fearch nor any meanes out find  
The fecret caufe and nature of his teene,  
Whereby fhe might apply fome medicine ; 190  
But weeping day and night, did him attend,  
And mourn'd to fee her losfe before her eyne,  
Which grieu'd her more, that fhe it could not mend :  
To fee an helpeffe euill, double grieve doth lend.

Nought could fhe read the roote of his difeafe,  
Ne weene what mifter maladie it is,  
Whereby to feeke some meanes it to appeafe.  
Moft did fhe thinke, but moft fhe thought amis,  
That that fame former fatall wound of his  
Whyleare by *Tryphon* was not thoroughly healed, 200  
But clofely rankled under th'orifs :



Leaft did ſhe thinke, that which he moſt concealed,  
That loue it was, which in his hart lay vnreuealed. /

Therefore to *Tryphon* ſhe againe doth haſt,  
And him doth chyde as falſe and fraudulent,  
That ſayld the truſt, which ſhe in him had plaſt,  
To cure her ſonne, as he his faith had lent ;  
Who now was ſalne into new languifhment  
Of his old hurt, which was not thoroughly cured.  
So backe he came vnto her patient ; 210  
Where ſearching euery part, her well affured,  
That it was no old fore, which his new paine procured.

But that it was ſome other maladie,  
Or grieſe vnknowne, which he could not diſcerne :  
So left he her withouten remedie.  
Then gan her heart to faint, and quake, and earne,  
And inly troubled was, the truth to learne.  
Vnto himſelfe ſhe came, and him beſought,  
Now with faire ſpeeches, now with threatnings ſterne,  
If ought lay hidden in his griued thought, 220  
It to reueale : who ſtill her answered, there was nought.

Nathleſſe ſhe reſted not ſo ſatiſfide,  
But leauing watry gods, as booting nought,  
Vnto the ſhinie heauen in haſte ſhe hide,  
And thence *Apollo* King of Leaches brought.  
*Apollo* came ; who ſoone as he had fought  
Through his diſeaſe, did by and by out find,  
That he did languifh of ſome inward thought,  
The which afflicted his engriued mind ;  
Which loue he red to be, that leads each liuing kind.

l. 210, ; for, —accepted : l. 212, 'That no old fore it was' (1611) : l. 216,  
'yerne' : l. 227, 'out-find.'

Which when he had vnto his mother told, 231

She gan thereat to fret, and greatly grieve.

And comming to her sonne, gan first to scold,

And chyde at him, that made her misbelieve :

But / afterwards she gan him soft to shrieve,

And wooe with faire intreatie, to disclose,

Which of the Nymphes his heart so fore did mieve.

For sure she weend it was some one of those,

Which he had lately seene, that for his loue he chose.

Now lesse she feared that same fatall read, 240

That warn'd him of womens loue beware :

Which being ment of mortall creatures sead,

For loue of Nymphes she thought she need not care,

But promist him, what euer wight she weare,

That she her loue, to him would shortly gaine :

So he her told : but soone as she did heare

That *Florimell* it was, which wrought his paine,

She gan a fresh to chafe, and grieve in euery vaine.

Yet since she saw the streight extremitie,

In which his life vnluckily was layd, 250

It was no time to scan the prophecie,

Whether old *Proteus* true or false had sayd,

That his decay should happen by a mayd.

It's late in death of daunger to aduize,

Or loue forbid him, that is life denayd :

But rather gan in troubled mind deuize,

How she that Ladies libertie might enterprize.

To *Proteus* selfe to see she thought it vaine,

Who was the root and worker of her woe :

Nor vnto any meaner to complaine, 260

But vnto great king *Neptune* selfe did goe,

And on her knee before him falling lowe,  
 Made humble fuit vnto his Maiestie,  
 To graunt to her, her sonnes life, which his foe  
 A cruell Tyrant had presumpteouſlie  
 By wicked doome condemn'd, a wretched death to die./

To whom God *Neptune* ſoftly ſmyling, thus ;  
 Daughter me ſeemes of double wrong ye plaine,  
 Gainſt one that hath both wronged you, and vs :  
 For death t'adward I ween'd did appertaine 270  
 To none, but to the ſeas ſole Soueraine.  
 Read therefore who it is, which this hath wrought,  
 And for what cauſe ; the truth diſcouer plaine.  
 For neuer wight ſo euill did or thought,  
 But would ſome rightfull cauſe pretend, though rightly  
 nought.

To whom ſhe anſwerd, Then it is by name  
*Proteus*, that hath ordain'd my ſonne to die ;  
 For that a waift, the which by fortune came  
 Vpon your ſeas, he claym'd as propertie :  
 And yet nor his, nor his in equitie, 280  
 But yours the waift by high prerogatiue.  
 Therefore I humbly craue your Maieſtie,  
 It to repleuie, and my ſonne repriue :  
 So ſhall you by one gift faue all vs three aliue.

He graunted it : and ſtreight his warrant made,  
 Vnder the Sea-gods ſeale autenticall,  
 Commaunding *Proteus* ſtraight t'enlarge the mayd,  
 Which wandring on his ſeas imperiall,  
 He lately tooke, and ſithence kept as thrall,  
 Which ſhe receiuing with meete thankefulneſſe, 290  
 Departed ſtraight to *Proteus* therewithall :

Who reading it with inward loathfulnesse,  
Was grieued to restore the pledge, he did possesse.

Yet durst he not the warrant to withstand,  
But vnto her deliuered *Florimell*.  
Whom she receiuing by the lilly hand,  
Admyr'd her beautie much, as she mote well ;  
For / she all liuing creatures did excell ;  
And was right ioyous, that she gotten had  
So faire a wife for her sonne *Marinell*. 300  
So home with her she streight the virgin lad,  
And shewed her to him, then being fore bestad.

Who soone as he beheld that angels face,  
Adorn'd with all diuine perfection,  
His cheared heart eftsoones away gan chace  
Sad death, reuiued with her sweet inspection  
And feeble spirit inly felt refection ;  
As withered weed through cruell winters tine,  
That feelles the warmth of sunny beames reflection,  
Liftes vp his head, that did before decline 310  
And gins to spread his leafe before the faire funshine.

Right so himselfe did *Marinell* vpreare,  
When he in place his dearest loue did spy ;  
And though his limbs could not his bodie beare,  
Ne former strength returne so suddenly,  
Yet chearefull signes he shewed outwardly.  
Ne lesse was she in secret hart affected,  
But that she masked it with modestie,  
For feare she should of lightnesse be detected:  
Which to another place I leaue to be perfected. 320

l. 320—after this in 1609 ' *The end of the fourth Booke.*'





# THE FIFTH BOOKE OF THE FAERIE QVEENE.

*Contayning*

## THE LEGEND OF ARTEGALL OR OF IVSTICE.

SO oft as I with state of present time,  
The image of the antique world compare,  
When as mans age was in his freshest prime, 10  
And the first blossome of faire vertue bare,  
Such oddes I finde twixt those, and these which are,  
As that, through long continuance of his course,  
Me seemes the world is runne quite out of square,  
From the first point of his appointed fourse,  
And being once amisse growes daily wourse and wourse

For from the golden age, that first was named,  
It's now as earst become a stonie one ;

l. 1, 'Fift': l. 5, 'Arthegall,' as throughout: l. 10, , for .—accepted :  
l. 18, 'as' accepted from 1611, for 'at' of '96 and 1609.

And men themfelues, the which at firft were framed  
 Of earthly mould, and form'd of flefh and bone, 2c  
 Are now transformed into hardeft ftone :  
 Such as behind their backs (fo backward bred)  
 Were throwne by *Pyrrha* and *Deucalione* :  
 And if then thofe may any worfe be red,  
 They into that ere long will be degenerated. /

Let none then blame me, if in difcipline  
 Of vertue and of ciuill vſes lore,  
 I doe not forme them to the common line  
 Of preſent dayes, which are corrupted fore,  
 But to the antique vſe, which was of yore, 30  
 When good was onely for it ſelfe defyred,  
 And all men fought their owne, and none no more ;  
 When Iuſtice was not for moſt meed outhyred,  
 But ſimple Truth did rayne, and was of all admyred.

For that which all men then did vertue call,  
 Is now cald vice : and that which vice was hight,  
 Is now hight vertue, and ſo vſ'd of all :  
 Right now iswrong, and wrong that was is right,  
 As all things elſe in time are chaunged quight.  
 Ne wonder ; for the heauens reuolution 40  
 Is wandred farre from, where it firſt was pight,  
 And ſoe doe make contrarie conſtitution  
 Of all this lower world, toward his diſſolution.

For who ſo liſt into the heauens looke,  
 And ſearch the courſes of the rowling ſpheares,  
 Shall find that from the point, where they firſt tooke  
 Their ſetting forth, in theſe few thouſand yeares  
 They all are wandred much ; that plaine appears.

For that same golden fleecy Ram, which bore  
*Phrixus* and *Helle* from their stepdames feares, 50  
 Hath now forgot, where he was plaft of yore,  
 And shouldred hath the Bull, which fayre *Europa* bore.

And eke the Bull hath with his bow-bent horne  
 So hardly butted those two twinnes of *Ioue*,  
 That they haue crusht the Crab, and quite him borne  
 Into the great *Nemæan* lions groue.  
 So / now all range, and doe at randon roue  
 Out of their proper places farre away,  
 And all this world with them amisse doe moue,  
 And all his creatures from their course astray, 60  
 Till they arriue at their last ruinous decay.

Ne is that same great glorious lampe of light,  
 That doth enlumine all these lesser fyres,  
 In better case, ne keepes his course more right,  
 But is miscaried with the other Spheres,  
 For since the terme of fourteene hundred fyres,  
 That learned *Ptolomæe* his hight did take,  
 He is declyned from that marke of theirs,  
 Nigh thirtie minutes to the Southerne lake ;  
 That makes me feare in time he will vs quite forsake. 70

And if to those *Ægyptian* wifards old,  
 Which in Star-read were wont haue best insight,  
 Faith may be giuen, it is by them told,  
 That since the time they first tooke the Sunnes hight,  
 Foure times his place he shifted hath in sight,  
 And twice hath risen, where he now doth West,  
 And wested twice, where he ought rise aright.

l. 53, '*boaw*': l. 69, '*thirtie*'—Dr. Morris queries '*thirteen*'? but it matters little which it be, as both are equally pseudo-scientific.



But most is *Mars* amisse of all the rest,  
And next to him old *Saturne*, that was wont be best.

For during *Saturnes* ancient raigne it's sayd, 80  
That all the world with goodnesse did abound :  
All loued vertue, no man was affrayd  
Of force, ne fraud in wight was to be found :  
No warre was knowne, no dreadfull trompets found,  
Peace vniuerfall rayn'd mongst men and beasts,  
And all things freely grew out of the ground :  
Iustice fate high ador'd with solemne feasts,  
And to all people did diuide her dred beheasts. /

Most sacred vertue she of all the rest,  
Resembling God in his imperiall might ; 90  
Whose soueraine powre is herein most exprest,  
That both to good and bad he dealeth right,  
And all his workes with Iustice hath bedight.  
That powre he also doth to Princes lend,  
And makes them like himselfe in glorious fight,  
To fit in his owne feate, his cause to end,  
And rule his people right, as he doth recommend.

Dread Souerayne Goddesse, that doest highest fit  
In seate of iudgement, in th'Almighties stead,  
And with magnificke might and wondrous wit 100  
Doeft to thy people righteous doome aread,  
That furthest Nations filles with awfull dread,  
Pardon the boldnesse of thy basest thrall,  
That dare discourse of so diuine a read,  
As thy great iustice prayfed ouer all :  
The instrument whereof loe here thy *Artegall*.

l. 83, 'no' (1611) : l. 88, 'dread' : l. 99, 'stead' for 'place'—accepted.

## Cant. / I.



**T**hough vertue then were held in highest price;  
 In those old times, of which I doe intreat,  
 Yet then likewise the wicked feede of vice  
 Began to spring which shortly grew full great,  
 And with their boughes the gentle plants did beat. 10  
 But euermore some of the vertuous race  
 Rose vp, inspired with heroicke heat,  
 That cropt the branches of the sient base,  
 And with strong hand their fruitfull rancknes did deface.

Each first was *Bacchus*, that with furious might  
 All th'East before vntam'd did ouerronne,  
 And wrong repressed, and establisht right,  
 Which lawlesse men had formerly fordonne.  
 There Iustice first her princely rule begonne.  
 Next *Hercules* his like ensample shewed, 20  
 Who all the West with equall conquest wonne,  
 And monstrous tyrants with his club subdued;  
 The club of Iustice dread, with kingly powre endewed.

And such was he, of whom I haue to tell,  
 The Champion of true Iustice *Artegall*.  
 Whom (as ye lately mote remember well)  
 An hard aduenture, which did then befall, /  
 Into redoubted perill forth did call ;  
 That was to succour a distressed Dame,  
 Whom a strong tyrant did vniustly thrall, 30  
 And from the heritage, which she did clame,  
 Did with strong hand withhold: *Grantor* to was his name.

Wherefore the Lady, which *Eirena* hight,  
 Did to the Faery Queene her way addresse,  
 To whom complayning her afflicted plight,  
 She her besought of gracious redresse.  
 That soueraine Queene, that mightie Emperesse,  
 Whose glorie is to aide all suppliants pore,  
 And of weake Princes to be Patronesse,  
 Chose *Artegall* to right her to restore ; 40  
 For that to her he seem'd best skild in righteous lore-

For *Artegall* in iustice was vpbrought  
 Euen from the cradle of his infancie,  
 And all the depth of rightfull doome was taught  
 By faire *Astræa*, with great industrie,  
 Whilest here on earth she liued mortallie.  
 For till the world from his perfection fell  
 Into all filth and foule iniquitie,  
*Astræa* here mongst earthly men did dwell,  
 And in the rules of iustice them instructed well. 50

Whiles through the world she walked in this fort,  
 Vpon a day she found this gentle childe,

ft his peres playing his childifh fport :  
 feeling fit, and with no crime defilde,  
 d allure with gifts and fpeeches milde,  
 d with her. So thence him farre ſhe brought  
 caue from companie exilde,  
 ch ſhe nourifed him, till yeares he raught,  
 he difcipline of iuſtice there him taught.

re him taught to weigh both right and wrong  
 all ballance with due recompence, 61  
 iutie to meafure out along,  
 ing to the line of confcience,  
 fo it needs with rigour to difpence.  
 the which, for want there of mankind,  
 ufed him to make experience  
 vyld beaſts, which ſhe in woods did find,  
 ngfull powre oppreſſing others of their kind.

him trayned, and thus ſhe him taught,  
 the ſkill of deeming wrong and right, 70  
 the ripeneſſe of mans yeares he raught ;  
 uen wilde beaſts did feare his awfull fight,  
 en admyr'd his ouerruling might ;  
 r liu'd on ground, that durſt withſtand  
 eadfull heaſt, much leſſe him match in fight,  
 e the horror of his wreakfull hand,  
 he liſt in wrath liſt vp his ſteely brand.

eely brand, to make him dreaded more,  
 ue vnto him, gotten by her flight  
 arneſt ſearch, where it was kept in ſtore 80  
 s eternall houſe, vnwiſt of wight,

Since he himfelfe it v'd in that great fight  
 Againft the *Titans*, that whylome rebelled  
 Gainft higheft heauen ; *Chryfaor* it was hight ;  
*Chryfaor* that all other fwords excelled,  
 Well prou'd in that fame day, when *Ioue* thofe Gyants  
 (quelled.

For of moft perfect metall it was made,  
 Tempred with Adamant amongft the fame,  
 And garnisht all with gold vpon the blade  
 In goodly wife, whereof it tooke his name, / 90  
 And was of no leffe vertue, then of fame.  
 For there no fubftance was fo firme and hard  
 But it would pierce or cleaue, where fo it came ;  
 Ne any armour could his dint out ward,  
 But wherefoeuer it did light, it throughly fhard.

Now when the world with finne gan to abound,  
*Aſtræa* loathing lenger here to fpace  
 Mongft wicked men, in whom no truth ſhe found,  
 Return'd to heauen, whence ſhe deriu'd her race ;  
 Where ſhe hath now an euerlaſting place, 100  
 Mongft thofe twelue ſignes, which nightly we doe ſee  
 The heauens bright-ſhining baudricke to enchace ;  
 And is the *Virgin*, fixt in her degree,  
 And next her ſelfe her righteous ballance hanging be


But when ſhe parted hence, ſhe left her groome  
 An yron man, which did on her attend  
 Alwayes, to execute her ſtedfaſt doome,  
 And willed him with *Artegall* to wend,  
 And doe what euer thing he did intend.  
 His name was *Talus*, made of yron mould, 110  
 Immoueable, refiſtleſſe, without end.

Who in his hand an yron flae did hould,  
With which he thresht out falshood, and did truth vn-  
fould.

He now went with him in this new inquest,  
Him for to aide, if aide he chaunst to neede,  
Against that cruell Tyrant, which opprest  
The faire *Irena* with his foule misdeede,  
And kept the crowne in which she should succeed.  
And now together on their way they bin,  
When as they saw a Squire in squallid weed, 120  
Lamenting fore his sorowfull sad tyne,  
With many bitter teares shed from his blubbred eyne.

To / whom as they approched, they espide  
A forie fight, as euer seene with eye ;  
An headlesse Ladie lying him beside,  
In her owne blood all wallow'd wofully,  
That her gay clothes did in discolour die.  
Much was he moued at that ruefull fight ;  
And flam'd with zeale of vengeance inwardly,  
He askt, who had that Dame so fouly dight ; 130  
Or whether his owne hand, or whether other wight ?

Ah woe is me, and well away (quoth hee)  
Bursting forth teares, like springs out of a banke,  
That euer I this dismall day did see :  
Full farre was I from thinking such a pranke ;  
Yet litle losse it were, and mickle thanke,  
If I should graunt that I haue doen the same,  
That I mote drinke the cup, whereof she dranke :  
But that I should die guiltie of the blame,  
The which another did, who now is fled with shame. 140



Who was it then (sayd *Artegall*) that wrought ?

And why ? doe it declare vnto me trew.

A knight (said he) if knight he may be thought,

That did his hand in Ladies blood embrew,

And for no cause, but as I shall you shew.

This day as I in folace fate hereby

: With a fayre loue, whose losse I now do rew,

There came this knight, hauing in companie

This lucklesse Ladie, which now here doth headlesse lie.——

He, whether mine seem'd fayrer in his eye,

15 —

Or that he waxed weary of his owne,

Would change with me ; but I did it denye ;

So did the Ladies both, as may be knowne, /

But he, whose spirit was with pride vpblowne,

Would not so rest contented with his right,

But hauing from his courser her downe throwne,

Fro me rest mine away by lawlesse might,

And on his steed her set, to beare her out of fight.

Which when his Ladie saw, she follow'd fast,

And on him catching hold, gan loud to crie

16 —

Not so to leaue her, nor away to cast,

But rather of his hand befought to die.

With that his sword he drew all wrathfully,

And at one stroke cropt off her head with scorne,

In that same place, whereas it now doth lie.

So he my loue away with him hath borne,

And left me here, both his & mine owne loue to mourne.

Aread (sayd he) which way then did he make ?

And by what markes may he be knowne againe ?


l. 142, ? for ,— accepted : l. 153, 'knownen' : l. 167, 'mourne.'

To hope (quoth he) him soone to ouertake, 170  
That hence so long departed, is but vaine :  
But yet he pricked ouer yonder plaine,  
And as I marked, bore vpon his shield,  
By which it's easie him to know againe,  
A broken sword within a bloodie field ;  
xpressing well his nature, which the same did wield.

So fooner sayd, but streight he after sent  
His yron page, who him pursew'd so light,  
As that it seem'd about the ground he went :  
For he was swift as swallow in her flight, 180  
And strong as Lyon in his Lordly might.  
It was not long, before he ouertooke  
Sir *Sangler* ; (so cleeped was that Knight)  
Whom at the first he ghesped by his looke,  
And by the other markes, which of his shield he tooke.

He / bad him stay, and backe with him retire ;  
Who full of scorne to be commaunded so,  
The Lady to alight did eft require,  
Whilest he reformed that vnciuill so :  
And streight at him with all his force did go. 190  
Who mou'd no more therewith, then when a rocke  
Is lightly stricken with some stones throw ;  
But to him leaping, lent him such a knocke,  
That on the ground he layd him like a sencelesse blocke.

But ere he could him selfe recure againe,  
Him in his iron paw he seized had ;  
That when he wak't out of his warelesse paine,  
He found him selfe vnswift, so ill bestad,  
That lim he could not wag. Thence he him lad,





Bound like a beast appointed to the stall : 200  
 The fight whereof the Ladie fore adrad,  
 And fain'd to fly for feare of being thrall ;  
 But he her quickly stayd, and forst to wend withall.

When to the place they came, where *Artegall*  
 By that fame carefull Squire did then abide,  
 He gently gan him to demaund of all,  
 That did betwixt him and that Squire betide.  
 Who with sterne countenance and indignant pride  
 Did aunswere, that of all he guiltlesse stood,  
 And his accuser thereuppon defide : 210  
 For neither he did shed that Ladies blood,  
 Nor tooke away his loue, but his owne proper good.

Well did the Squire perceiue him selfe too weake,  
 To aunswere his defiaunce in the field,  
 And rather chofe his challenge off to breake,  
 Then to approue his right with speare and shield. /  
 And rather guilty chofe him selfe to yield.  
 But *Artegall* by signes perceiuing plaine,  
 That he it was not, which that Lady kild,  
 But that strange Knight, the fairer loue to gaine, 220  
 Did cast about by sleight the truth thereout to straine.

And sayd, now sure this doubtfull caufes right  
 Can hardly but by Sacrament be tride,  
 Or else by ordele, or by bloody fight ;  
 That ill perhaps mote fall to either fide.  
 But if ye please, that I your cause decide,  
 Perhaps I may all further quarrell end,  
 So ye will sweare my iudgement to abide.  
 Thereto they both did franckly condiscend,  
 And to his doome with listfull cares did both attend.

Sith then (sayd he) ye both the dead deny, 231  
 And both the liuing Lady claime your right,  
 Let both the dead and liuing equally  
 Deuided be betwixt you here in fight,  
 And each of either take his share aright.  
 But looke who does diffent from this my read,  
 He for a twelue moneths day shall in despight  
 Beare for his penaunce that same Ladies head ;  
 To witnesse to the world, that she by him is dead.

Well pleased with that doome was *Sangliere*, 240  
 And offred streight the Lady to be slaine.  
 But that same Squire, to whom she was more dere,  
 When as he saw she should be cut in twaine,  
 Did yield, she rather should with him remaine  
 Aliue, then to him selfe be shared dead ;  
 And rather then his loue should suffer paine,  
 He chose with shame to beare that Ladies head  
 True loue despiseth shame, when life is cald in dread.

Whom / when so willing *Artegall* perceaued ;  
 Not so thou Squire, (he sayd) but thine I deeme 250  
 The liuing Lady, which from thee he reaued :  
 For worthy thou of her doest rightly seeme.  
 And you, Sir Knight, that loue so light esteeme,  
 As that ye would for little leaue the same,  
 Take here your owne, that doth you best befeeme,  
 And with it beare the burden of defame ;  
 Your owne dead Ladies head, to tell abrode your shame.

But *Sangliere* disdained much his doome,  
 And sternly gan repine at his beheaft ;

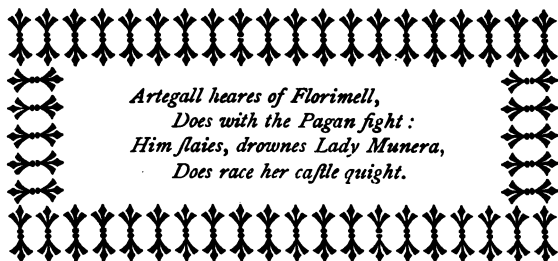
l. 239, 'his' for 'is.'

Ne would for ought obay, as did become, 2  
 To beare that Ladies head before his breast.  
 Vntill that *Talus* had his pride represt,  
 And forced him, maulgre, it vp to reare.  
 Who when he saw it bootelesse to resist,  
 He tooke it vp, and thence with him did beare,  
 As rated Spaniell takes his burden vp for feare.

Much did that Squire Sir *Artegall* adore,  
 For his great iustice, held in high regard ;  
 And as his Squire him offred euermore  
 To serue, for want of other meete reward, 2  
 And wend with him on his aduenture hard.  
 But he thereto would by no meanes consent ;  
 But leauing him forth on his iourney far'd :  
 Ne wight with him but onely *Talus* went.  
 They two enough t'encounter an whole Regiment. /

l. 269, (as . . . Squire).

## Cant. II.



Nought is more honorable to a knight,  
 Ne better doth befeeme braue cheualry,  
 Then to defend the feeble in their right,  
 And wrong redresse in such as wend awry.  
 Whilome those great Heroes got thereby 10  
 Their greatest glory, for their rightfull deedes,  
 And place deferued with the Gods on hy.  
 Herein the noblesse of this knight exceedes,  
 Who now to perils great for iustice sake proceedes.

To which as he now was vppon the way,  
 He chaunst to meet a Dwarfe in hasty course ;  
 Whom he requir'd his forward haft to stay,  
 Till he of tidings mote with him discourse.  
 Loth was the Dwarfe, yet did he stay perforce,  
 And gan of sundry newes his store to tell, 20  
 As to his memory they had recourse :

l. 3, 'Munera'—obvious correction of 'Momera' of '96, 1609, etc. : l. 5, 'rase' : l. 21, 'As' accepted for 'And' of '96.

But chiefly of the fairest *Florimell*,  
How she was found againe, and spoufde to *Marinell*.

For this was *Dony*, *Florimels* owne Dwarfes,  
Whom hauing loft (as ye haue heard whyleare)  
And finding in the way the scattred scarfe,  
The fortune of her life long time did feare.  
But / of her health when *Artegall* did heare,  
And safe returne, he was full inly glad,  
And askt him where, and when her bridale cheare 30  
Should be solemniz'd : for if time he had,  
He would be there, and honor to her spoufall ad.

Within three daies (quoth hee) as I do here,  
It will be at the Castle of the strond ;  
What time if naught me let, I will be there  
To doe her seruice, so as I am bond.  
But in my way a little here beyond  
A curfed cruell Sarazin doth wonne,  
That keepes a Bridges passage by strong hond,  
And many errant Knights hath there fordonne ; 40  
That makes all men for feare that passage for to shonne.

What mister wight (quoth he) and how far hence  
Is he, that doth to trauellers such harmes ?  
He is (said he) a man of great defence ;  
Expert in battell and in deedes of armes ;  
And more emboldned by the wicked charmes,  
With which his daughter doth him still support ;  
Hauing great Lordships got and goodly farmes,  
Through strong oppression of his powre extort ; 49  
By which he stil them holds, & keepes with strong effort.

l. 33, 'hee' for 'she' of '96 : l. 35, 'nought,' as before.

id dayly he his wrongs encreafeth more,  
 For neuer wight he lets to paffe that way,  
 Ouer his Bridge, albee he rich or poore,  
 But he him makes his paffage-penny pay :  
 Elfe he doth hold him backe or beat away.  
 Thereto he hath a groome of euill guize,  
 Whose scalp is bare, that bondage doth bewray,  
 Which pols and pils the poore in piteous wize ;  
 It he him felfe vppon the rich doth tyrannize. /

is name his hight *Pollente*, rightly so 60  
 For that he is fo puiffant and strong,  
 That with his powre he all doth ouergo,  
 And makes them fubiect to his mighty wrong ;  
 And fome by fleyght he eke doth vnderfong.  
 For on a Bridge he custometh to fight,  
 Which is but narrow, but exceeding long ;  
 And in the fame are many trap fals pight, (fight.  
 through which the rider downe doth fall through ouer-

and vnderneath the fame a riuer flowes,  
 That is both fwift and dangerous deepe withall ; 70  
 Into the which whom fo he ouerthrowes,  
 All deftitute of helpe doth headlong fall,  
 But he him felfe through praetife vfually,  
 Leapes forth into the floud, and there affaies  
 His foe confused through his fodaine fall,  
 That horfe and man he equally difmaies,  
 And either both them drownes, or trayteroufly flaies.

en doth he take the spoile of them at will,  
 And to his daughter brings, that dwels thereby :

l. 52, , substituted for .

Who all that comes doth take, and therewith fill 80  
 The coffers of her wicked threafury ;  
 Which she with wrongs hath heaped vp so hy,  
 That many Princes she in wealth exceedes,  
 And purchast all the countrey lying ny  
 With the reuenue of her plenteous meedes :  
 Her name is *Munera*, agreeing with her deedes.

Thereto she is full faire, and rich attired,  
 With golden hands and filuer feete beside,  
 That many Lords haue her to wife desired :  
 But she them all despiseth for great pride. 90  
 Now / by my life (sayd he) and God to guide,  
 None other way will I this day betake,  
 But by that Bridge, whereas he doth abide :  
 Therefore me thither lead. No more he spake,  
 But thitherward forthright his ready way did make—

Vnto the place he came within a while,  
 Where on the Bridge he ready armed saw  
 The Sarazin, awayting for some spoile.  
 Who as they to the passage gan to draw,  
 A villaine to them came with scull all raw, 100  
 That passage money did of them require,  
 According to the custome of their law.  
 To whom he aunswerd wroth, loe there thy hire ;  
 And with that word him strooke, that streight he did  
 expire.

Which when the Pagan saw, he wexed wroth,  
 And streight him selfe vnto the fight addrest,

l. 85, : for ; : l. 99, 'Who'—sic. Church suggested 'Tho' = then; Dr. Morris reads 'when.'

Ne was Sir *Artegall* behinde : so both  
 Together ran with ready speares in rest.  
 Right in the midft, whereas they breft to breft  
 Should meete, a trap was letten downe to fall 110  
 Into the flood : streight leapt the Carle vnbleft,  
 Well weening that his foe was falne withall :  
 But he was well aware, and leapt before his fall.

There being both together in the flood,  
 They each at other tyrannously flew ;  
 Ne ought the water cooled their whot bloud,  
 But rather in them kindled choler new.  
 But there the Paynim, who that vse well knew  
 To fight in water, great aduantage had,  
 That oftentimes him nigh he ouerthrew : 120  
 And eke the courfer, whereuppon he rad,  
 Could swim like to a fish, whiles he his backe befrad. /

Which oddes when as Sir *Artegall* espide,  
 He saw no way, but close with him in haft ;  
 And to him driuing strongly downe the tide,  
 Vppon his iron collar griped fast,  
 That with the straint his wefand nigh he braft.  
 There they together stroue and struggled long,  
 Either the other from his steede to cast ;  
 Ne euer *Artegall* his griple strong 130  
 For any thing wold slacke, but still vppon him hong.

As when a Dolphin and a Sele are met,  
 In the wide champion of the Ocean plaine :  
 With cruell chaufe their courages they whet,  
 The maysterdome of each by force to gaine,



And dreadfull battaile twixt them do darraine :  
 They snuf, they snort, they bouce, they rage, they  
 That all the sea disturbed with their traine, (rore,  
 Doth frie with some aboue the farges hore.  
 Such was betwixt these two the troublefome vprore.

So *Artegall* at length him forst forsake 141  
 His horses backe, for dread of being drownd,  
 And to his handy swimming him betake.  
 Eftfoones him selfe he from his hold vnbownd,  
 And then no ods at all in him he fownd :  
 For *Artegall* in swimming skilfull was,  
 And durft the depth of any water fownd.  
 So ought each Knight, that vse of perill has,  
 In swimming be expert through waters force to pas.

Then very doubtfull was the warres euent, 150  
 Vncertaine whether had the better fide :  
 For both were skild in that experiment,  
 And both in armes well traind and throughly tride.  
 But / *Artegall* was better breath'd beside,  
 And towards th'end, grew greater in his might,  
 That his faint foe no longer could abide  
 His puissance, ne beare him selfe vpriht,  
 But from the water to the land betooke his flight.

But *Artegall* purfewd him still so neare, 160  
 With bright Chrysaor in his cruell hand,  
 That as his head he gan a litle reare  
 Aboue the brincke, to tread vpon the land,

He smote it off, that tumbling on the strand  
It bit the earth for very fell despight,  
And gnashed with his teeth, as if he band  
High God, whose goodnesse he despaired quight,  
Or curst the hand, which did that vengeaunce on him  
dight.

His corps was carried downe along the Lee,  
Whose waters with his filthy bloud it stayned :  
But his blasphemous head, that all might see, 170  
He pitcht vpon a pole on high ordayned ;  
Where many years it afterwards remayned,  
To be a mirrour to all mighty men,  
In whose right hands great power is containd,  
That none of them the feeble ouerren,  
But alwaies doe their powre within iust compasse pen.

That done, vnto the Castle he did wend,  
In which the Paynims daughter did abide,  
Guarded of many which did her defend :  
Of whom he entrance sought, but was denide, 180  
And with reprochfull blasphemy defide,  
Beaten with stones downe from the battilment,  
That he was forced to withdraw aside ;  
And bad his seruant *Talus* to inuent  
Which way he enter might, without endangerment. /

Estfoones his Page drew to the Castle gate,  
And with his iron flae at it let flie,  
That all the warders it did fore amate,  
The which crewhile spake so reprochfully,  
And made them stoupe, that looked earst so hie. 190

Yet still he bet, and bounst vppon the dore,  
 And thundred strokes thereon so hideouslie,  
 That all the peece he shaked from the flore,  
 And filled all the house with feare and great vprore.

With noise whereof the Lady forth appeared  
 Vppon the Castle wall, and when she saw  
 The daungerous state, in which she stood, she feared  
 The sad effect of her neare ouerthrow ;  
 And gan entreat that iron man below,  
 To cease his outrage, and him faire besought, 200  
 Sith neither force of stones which they did throw,  
 Nor powr of charms, which she against him wrought,  
 Might otherwise preuaile, or make him cease for ought.

But when as yet she saw him to proceede,  
 Vnmou'd with praiers, or with piteous thought,  
 She ment him to corrupt with goodly meede ;  
 And caufde great sackes with endlesse riches fraught,  
 Vnto the battilment to be vpbrought,  
 And powred forth ouer the Castle wall,  
 That she might win some time, though dearly bought  
 Whilest he to gathering of the gold did fall. 211  
 But he was nothing mou'd, nor tempted therewithall ;

But still continu'd his assault the more,  
 And layd on load with his huge yron flaile,  
 That at the length he has yrent the dore,  
 And made way for his maister to assaile.  
 Who / being entred, nought did then auaille  
 For wight, against his powre them selues to reare :  
 Each one did flie ; their hearts began to faile,

l. 210, (*though . . . bought*) : l. 212, ; for . —accepted.

And hid them selues in corners here and there; 220  
And eke their dame halfe dead did hide her self for feare.

Long they her fought, yet no where could they finde her,  
That sure they ween'd she was escapt away :  
But *Talus*, that could like a limehound winde her,  
And all things secrete wisely could bewray,  
At length found out, whereas she hidden lay  
Vnder an heape of gold. Thence he her drew  
By the faire lockes, and fowly did array,  
Withouten pittie of her goodly hew,  
That *Artegall* him selfe her seemeleffe plight did rew.

Yet for no pittie would he change the course 231  
Of Iustice, which in *Talus* hand did lye ;  
Who rudely hayld her forth without remorse,  
Still holding vp her suppliant hands on hye,  
And kneeling at his feete submissiuely.  
But he her suppliant hands, those hands of gold,  
And eke her feete, those feete of siluer trye,  
Which fought vnrighteousnesse, and iustice sold,  
Chopt off, and nayld on high, that all might the behold.

Her selfe then tooke he by the sclender wast, 240  
In vaine loud crying, and into the flood  
Ouer the Castle wall adowne her cast,  
And there her drowned in the durty mud :  
But the streame washt away her guilty blood.  
Thereafter all that mucky pelfe he tooke,  
The spoile of peoples euill gotten good,

l. 232, ; for ,—accepted : l. 233, 'hal'd' : l. 238 within ( ) : l. 240, 'sclender.' Cf. 'sclaunder' (Glossary, s.v.)

The which her fire had scrap't by hooke and crooke =  
And burning all to ashes, powr'd it downe the brooke. /

And lastly all that Castle quite he raced,  
Euen from the sole of his foundation, 250  
And all the hewen stones thereof defaced,  
That there mote be no hope of reparation,  
Nor memory thereof to any nation.  
All which when *Talus* throughly had perfourmed,  
Sir *Artegall* vndid the euill fashion,  
And wicked customes of that Bridge refourmed.  
Which done, vnto his former iourney he retourned.

In which they measur'd mickle weary way,  
Till that at length nigh to the sea they drew ;  
By which as they did trauell on a day, 260  
They saw before them, far as they could vew,  
Full many people gathered in a crew :  
Whose great assembly they did much admire,  
For neuer there the like resort they knew.  
So towards them they coasted, to enquire  
What thing so many nations met, did there desire.

There they beheld a mighty Gyant stand  
Vpon a rocke, and holding forth on hie  
An huge great paire of ballance in his hand,  
With which he boasted in his furquedrie, 270  
That all the world he would weigh equallie,  
If ought he had the same to counterpoys.  
For want whereof he weighed vanity,  
And fild his ballaunce full of idle toys :  
Yet was admired much of fooles, women, and boys.

l. 247 ; for , substituted : l. 249, 'rafed' : l. 263, , for .—accepted.

He sayd that he would all the earth vptake,  
 And all the sea, deuided each from either :  
 So would he of the fire one ballaunce make,  
 And one of th'ayre, without or wind, or wether :  
 Then / would he ballaunce heauen and hell together,  
 And all that did within them all containe ; 281  
 Of all whose weight, he would not misse a fether.  
 And looke what surplus did of each remaine,  
 He would to his owne part restore the same againe.

For why, he sayd, they all vnequall were,  
 And had encroched vppon others share,  
 Like as the sea (which plaine he shewed there)  
 Had worne the earth ; so did the fire the aire ;  
 So all the rest did others parts empaire.  
 And so were realmes and nations run awry. 290  
 All which he vndertooke for to repaire,  
 In fort as they were formed aunciently ;  
 And all things would reduce vnto equality.

Wherefore the vulgar did about him flocke,  
 And cluster thicke vnto his leafings vaine,  
 Like foolish flies about an hony crocke,  
 In hope by him great benefite to gaine,  
 And vncontrolled freedome to obtaine.  
 All which when *Artegall* did see, and heare, 300  
 How he mis-led the simple peoples traine,  
 In sdeignfull wize he drew vnto him neare,  
 And thus vnto him spake, without regard or feare ;

l. 285, , after '*sayd*'—accepted : l. 288, '*earth*' is misprinted '*care*' in 6 ; and : for , and ; for ,—accepted ; l. 302, ; for . —accepted.

Thou that presum'st to weigh the world anew,  
 And all things to an equall to restore,  
 In stead of right, me seemes great wrong dost shew,  
 And far about thy forces pitch to fore.  
 For ere thou limit what is lesse or more  
 In euery thing, thou oughtest first to know,  
 What was the poyse of euery part of yore :  
 And looke then how much it doth ouerflow, 310  
 Or faile thereof, so much is more then iust to trow. /

For at the first they all created were  
 In goodly measure, by their Makers might,  
 And weighed out in ballaunces so nere,  
 That not a dram was missing of their right.  
 The earth was in the middle centre pight,  
 In which it doth immoueable abide,  
 Hemd in with waters like a wall in sight ;  
 And they with aire, that not a drop can slide :  
 Al which the heauens containe, & in their courfes guide—

Such heauenly iustice doth among them raine, 321  
 That euery one doe know their certaine bound,  
 In which they doe these many yeares remaine,  
 And mongst them al no change hath yet beene found—  
 But if thou now shouldst weigh them new in pound,  
 We are not sure they would so long remaine :  
 All change is perillous, and all chaunce vnfound.  
 Therefore leaue off to weigh them all againe,  
 Till we may be assur'd they shall their course retaine.

Thou foolishse Elfe (said then the Gyant wroth) 330  
 Seest not, how badly all things present bee,

l. 305, —accepted after 'right' : l. 315, . for, —accepted.

And each estate quite out of order go'th ?  
 The fea it selfe doest thou not plainly see  
 Encroch vppon the land there vnder thee ;  
 And th'earth it selfe how daily its increast,  
 By all that dying to it turned be ?  
 Were it not good that wrong were then furceast,  
 And from the most, that some were giuen to the least ?

Therefore I will throw downe these mountaines hie,  
 And make them leuell with the lowly plaine : 340  
 These towring rocks, which reach vnto the skie,  
 I will thrust downe into the deepest maine,  
 And / as they were, them equalize againe.  
 Tyrants that make men subiect to their law,  
 I will suppress, that they no more may raine ;  
 And Lordings curbe, that commons ouer-aw ;  
 And all the wealth of rich men to the poore will draw.

Of things vnseene how canst thou deeme aright,  
 Then answered the righteous *Artegall*,  
 Sith thou misdeem'st so much of things in fight ?  
 What though the sea with waues continuall 351  
 Doe eate the earth, it is no more at all :  
 Ne is the earth the lesse, or loseth ought,  
 For whatfoeuer from one place doth fall,  
 Is with the tide vnto an other brought :  
 For there is nothing lost, but may be found, if fought.

Likewife the earth is not augmented more,  
 By all that dying into it doe fade.

- l. 332, 'go'th' as before, accepted for 'goth' : l. 336, ? for .—accepted :  
 • 339, 'thofe' : l. 345, 'raigne' : l. 356, 'but' substituted for 'that' :  
 • 359, ; for ,—accepted.



For of the earth they formed were of yore ;  
 How euer gay their blossome or their blade 360  
 Doe flourish now, they into dust shall vade.  
 What wrong then is it, if that when they die,  
 They turne to that, whereof they first were made ?  
 All in the powre of their great Maker lie :  
 All creatures must obey the voice of the most hie.

They liue, they die, like as he doth ordaine,  
 Ne euer any asketh reason why.  
 The hils doe not the lowly dales disdaine ;  
 The dales doe not the lofty hils enuy.  
 He maketh Kings to sit in foueraignty ; 370  
 He maketh subiects to their powre obay ;  
 He pulleth downe, he setteth vp on hy ;  
 He giues to this, from that he takes away.  
 For all we haue is his : what he list doe, he may. /

What euer thing is done, by him is donne,  
 Ne any may his mighty will withstand ;  
 Ne any may his foueraine power shonne,  
 Ne loose that he hath bound with stedfast band.  
 In vaine therefore doest thou now take in hand,  
 To call to count, or weigh his workes anew, 380  
 Whose counsels depth thou canst not vnderstand,  
 Sith of things subiect to thy daily vew  
 Thou doest not know the causes, nor their courses dew.

For take thy ballaunce, if thou be so wise,  
 And weigh the winde, that vnder heauen doth blow ;

Or weigh the light, that in the East doth rise ;  
 Or weigh the thought, that frō mans mind doth flow.  
 But if the weight of these thou canst not show,  
 Weigh but one word which from thy lips doth fall.  
 For how canst thou those greater secrets know, 390  
 That doest not know the least thing of them all ?  
 Ill can he rule the great, that cannot reach the small.

Therewith the Gyant much abashed sayd ;  
 That he of little things made reckoning light,  
 Yet the least word that euer could be layd  
 Within his ballaunce, he could way aright.  
 Which is (sayd he) more heauy then in weight,  
 The right or wrong, the false or else the trew ?  
 He answered, that he would try it streight,  
 So he the words into his ballaunce threw, 400  
 But streight the winged words out of his ballaunce flew.

Wroth wext he then, and sayd, that words were light,  
 Ne would within his ballaunce well abide.  
 But he could iustly weigh the wrong or right.  
 Well then, sayd *Artegal*, let it be tride.  
 Firſt / in one ballance ſet the true aſide.  
 He did ſo firſt ; and then the false he layd  
 In th'other ſcale ; but ſtill it downe did ſlide,  
 And by no meane could in the weight be ſtayd.  
 For by no meanes the false will with the truth be wayd.

Now take the right likewise, ſaid *Artegal*, 411  
 And counterpeiſe the ſame with ſo much wrong.

l. 396, 'weigh' : l. 409, 'weight'—Church ſuggeſts 'ſcale.'

So first the right he put into one scale ;  
 And then the Gyant stroue with puissance strong  
 To fill the other scale with so much wrong.  
 But all the wrongs that he therein could lay,  
 Might not it peife ; yet did he labour long,  
 And swat, and chauf'd, and proued euery way :  
 Yet all the wrongs could not a litle right downe lay.

Which when he saw, he greatly grew in rage, 420  
 And almost would his balances haue broken :  
 But *Artegall* him fairely gan asswage,  
 And said ; be not vpon thy balance wroken :  
 For they doe nought but right or wrong betoken ;  
 But in the mind the doome of right must bee ;  
 And so likewise of words, the which be spoken,  
 The eare must be the ballance, to decree  
 And iudge, whether with truth or falshood they agree.

But set the truth and set the right aside,  
 For they with wrong or falshood will not fare ; 430  
 And put two wrongs together to be tride,  
 Or else two falses, of each equall share ;  
 And then together doe them both compare.  
 For truth is one, and right is euer one.  
 So did he, and then plaine it did appeare,  
 Whether of them the greater were attone.  
 But right fate in the midst of the beame alone./

But he the right from thence did thrust away,  
 For it was not the right, which he did seeke ;

l. 419, '*lay*'—accepted for '*way*,' repeated from former line in '96;  
 l. 430 within ( ).

But rather stroue extremities to way, 440  
 Th'one to diminish, th'other for to eeke.  
 For of the meane he greatly did misleeke.  
 Whom when so lewdly minded *Talus* found,  
 Approching nigh vnto him cheeke by cheeke,  
 He shouldered him from off the higher ground,  
 And down the rock him throwing, in the sea him  
 dround.

Like as a ship, whom cruell tempest driues  
 Vpon a rocke with horrible difmay,  
 Her shattered ribs in thousand peeces riuies,  
 And spoyling all her geares and goodly ray, 450  
 Does make her selfe misfortunes piteous pray.  
 So downe the cliffe the wretched Gyant tumbled ;  
 His battred ballances in peeces lay,  
 His timbered bones all broken rudely rumbled :  
 So was the high aspyring with huge ruine humbled.

That when the people, which had there about  
 Long wayted, saw his sudden defolation,  
 They gan to gather in tumultuous rout,  
 And mutining, to stirre vp ciuill faction,  
 For certaine losse of so great expectation. 460  
 For well they hoped to haue got great good,  
 And wondrous riches by his innouation.  
 Therefore resoluing to reuenge his blood,  
 They rose in armes, and all in battell order stood.

Which lawlesse multitude him comming too  
 In warlike wise, when *Artegall* did vew,

l. 451, 'makes' '96 : l. 454, : for ,—accepted : l. 461, , for ;—accepted.

He much was troubled, ne wist what to doo.  
 For loth he was his noble hands t'embrew  
 In / the base blood of such a rascall crew ;  
 And otherwise, if that he should retire, 470  
 He fear'd least they with shame would him pursfew.  
 Therefore he *Talus* to them sent, t'inquire  
 The cause of their array, and truce for to desire.

But foone as they him nigh approaching spide,  
 They gan with all their weapons him assay,  
 And rudely stroke at him on euery side :  
 Yet nought they could him hurt, ne ought dismay.  
 But when at them he with his flaile gan lay,  
 He like a swarme of flyes them ouerthrew ;  
 Ne any of them durst come in his way, 480  
 But here and there before his prefence flew,  
 And hid themselues in holes and bushes from his vew.

As when a Faulcon hath with nimble flight  
 Flowne at a flush of Ducks, foreby the brooke,  
 The trembling foule dismayd with dreadfull fight  
 Of death, the which them almost ouertooke,  
 Doe hide themselues from her astonying looke,  
 Amongst the flags and couert round about.  
 When *Talus* saw they all the field forfooke  
 And none appear'd of all that raskall rout, 490  
 To *Artegall* he turn'd, and went with him throughout. /

1. 476, '*strooke*.'

*Cant. III.*

*The spousals of faire Florimell,  
where turney many knights :  
There Braggadochio is uncaſ'd  
in all the Ladies fights.*

After long stormes and tempests ouerblowne,  
The sunne at length his ioyous face doth cleare :  
So when as fortune all her spight hath showne,  
Some blisfull houres at last must needs appeare ;  
Else should afflicted wights oftimes despeire. 10  
So comes it now to *Florimell* by tourne,  
After long sorrowes suffered whyleare,  
In which captiu'd she many moneths did mourne,  
To tast of ioy, and to wont pleasures to retourne.

Who being freed from *Proteus* cruell band  
By *Marinell*, was vnto him affide,  
And by him brought againe to Faerie land ;  
Where he her spouf'd and made his ioyous bride.  
The time and place was blazed farre and wide ;  
And solemne feasts and giufts ordain'd therefore. 20  
To which there did resort from euery side  
Of Lords and Ladies infinite great store ;  
Ne any Knight was absent, that braue courage bore.

To tell the glorie of the feast that day,  
 The goodly seruice, the deuicefull fights,  
 The bridegromes state, the brides most rich aray,  
 The pride of Ladies, and the worth of knights,  
 The / royall banquets, and the rare delights,  
 Were worke fit for an Herauld, not for me :  
 But for so much as to my lot here lights, 30  
 That with this present treatise doth agree,  
 True vertue to aduance, shall here recounted bee.

When all men had with full satietie  
 Of meates and drinckes their appetites suffiz'd,  
 To deedes of armes and prooffe of cheualrie  
 They gan themfelues addresse, full rich aguiz'd,  
 As each one had his furnitures deuiz'd.  
 And first of all issu'd Sir *Marinell*,  
 And with him fixe knights more, which enterpriz'd  
 To challenge all in right of *Florimell*, 40  
 And to maintaine, that she all others did excell.

The first of them was hight Sir *Orimont*,  
 A noble Knight, and tride in hard assayes :  
 The second had to name Sir *Bellifont*,  
 But second vnto none in prowesse prayse ;  
 The third was *Brunell*, famous in his dayes ;  
 The fourth *Ecastor*, of exceeding might ;  
 The fift *Armeddan*, skild in louely layes ;  
 The sixt was *Lansack*, a redoubted Knight : (fight.  
 All fixe well seene in armes, and prou'd in many a

And them against came all that list to giust, 51  
 From euery coast and countrie vnder funne :

None was debard, but all had leaue that lust.  
 The trompets found ; then all together ronne.  
 Full many deedes of armes that day were donne,  
 And many knights vnhorst, and many wounded,  
 As fortune fell ; yet litle lost or wonne :  
 But all that day the greatest prayse redounded  
 To *Marinell*, whose name the Heralds loud refounded. /

The second day, so soone as morrow light 60  
 Appear'd in heauen, into the field they came,  
 And there all day continew'd cruell fight,  
 With diuers fortune fit for such a game,  
 In which all stroue with perill to winne fame.  
 Yet whether fide was victor, note be ghest :  
 But at the last the trompets did proclame  
 That *Marinell* that day deserued best.  
 So they disparted were, and all men went to rest.

The third day came, that should due tryall lend  
 Of all the rest, and then this warlike crew 70  
 Together met, of all to make an end.  
 There *Marinell* great deeds of armes did shew ;  
 And through the thickest like a Lyon flew,  
 Rashing off helmes, and ryuing plates a fonder,  
 That euery one his daunger did eschew.  
 So terribly his dreadfull strokes did thonder,  
 That all men stood amaz'd, & at his might did wonder.

But what on earth can alwayes happie stand ?  
 The greater prowesse greater perils find.

l. 54, 'runne': l. 65, 'note,'



So farre he past amongst his enemies band, 80  
That they haue him enclosed so behind,  
As by no meanes he can himselfe outwind.  
And now perforce they haue him prisoner taken ;  
And now they doe with captiue bands him bind ;  
And now they lead him thence, of all forsaken,  
Vnlesse some succour had in time him ouertaken.

It fortun'd whylest they were thus ill beset,  
Sir *Artegall* into the Tilt-yard came,  
With *Braggadochio*, whom he lately met  
Vpon the way, with that his snowy Dame. 90  
Where / when he vnderstood by common fame,  
What euill hap to *Marinell* betid,  
He much was mou'd at so vnworthie shame,  
And streight that boaster prayd, with whom he rid,  
To change his shield with him, to be the better hid.

So forth he went, and soone them ouer hent,  
Where they were leading *Marinell* away,  
Whom he assayld with dreadlesse hardiment,  
And forst the burden of their prize to stay.  
They were an hundred knights of that array ; 100  
Of which th'one halfe vpon himselfe did set,  
Th'other stayd behind to gard the pray.  
But he ere long the former fiftie bet ;  
And from th'other fiftie soone the prisoner fet.

So backe he brought Sir *Marinell* againe ;  
Whom hauing quickly arm'd againe anew,  
They both together ioyned might and maine,  
To set afresh on all the other crew.

Whom with fore hauocke soone they ouerthrew,  
 And chaced quite out of the field, that none 110  
 Against them durst his head to perill shew.  
 So were they left Lords of the field alone :  
 So *Marinell* by him was rescu'd from his fone.

Which when he had perform'd, then backe againe  
 To *Braggadocchio* did his shield restore :  
 Who all this while behind him did remaine,  
 Keeping there clofe with him in pretious store  
 That his false Ladie, as ye heard afore.  
 Then did the trumpets sound, and Iudges rose,  
 And all these knights, which that day armour bore,  
 Came to the open hall, to listen whose 121  
 The honour of the prize should be adiudg'd by thofe. /

And thether also came in open fight  
 Fayre *Florimell*, into the common hall,  
 To greet his guerdon vnto euery knight,  
 And best to him, to whom the best should fall.  
 Then for that stranger knight they loud did call,  
 To whom that day they should the girlond yield.  
 Who came not forth : but for Sir *Artegall*  
 Came *Braggadocchio*, and did shew his shield, 130  
 Which bore the Sunne brode blazed in a golden field.

The fight whereof did all with gladnesse fill :  
 So vnto him they did addeeme the prize  
 Of all that Tryumph. Then the trumpets shrill  
 Don *Braggadochios* name resounded thrise :  
 So courage lent a cloke to cowardise.  
 And then to him came fayrest *Florimell*,  
 And goodly gan to greet his braue emprise,

And thoufand thanks him yeeld, that had fo well  
 Approu'd that day, that ſhe all others did excell. 140

To whom the boafter, that all knights did blot,  
 With proud diſdaine did ſcornefull anſwere make ;  
 That what he did that day, he did it not  
 For her, but for his owne deare Ladies ſake,  
 Whom on his perill he did vndertake,  
 Both her and eke all others to excell :  
 And further did vncomely ſpeeches crake.  
 Much did his words the gentle Ladie quell,  
 And turn'd aſide for ſhame to heare, what he did tell.

Then forth he brought his ſnowy *Florimele*, 150  
 Whom *Trompart* had in keeping there beſide,  
 Couered from peoples gazement with a vele.  
 Whom when diſcouered they had throughly eide,  
 With / great amazement they were ſtupefide ;  
 And ſaid, that ſurely *Florimell* it was,  
 Or if it were not *Florimell* ſo tride,  
 That *Florimell* her ſelfe ſhe then did pas.  
 So feeble ſkill of perfect things the vulgar has.

Which when as *Marinell* beheld likewiſe,  
 He was therewith exceedingly diſmayd ; 160  
 Ne wiſt he what to thinke, or to deuife,  
 But like as one, whom ſeends had made affrayd,  
 He long aſtoniſht ſtood : ne ought he ſayd,  
 Ne ought he did, but with faſt fixed eies  
 He gazed ſtill vpon that ſnowy mayd ;  
 Whom euer as he did the more auize,  
 The more to be true *Florimell* he did furmize.

As when two funnes appeare in the azure skye,  
 Mounted in *Phæbus* charet fierie bright,  
 Both darting forth faire beames to each mans eye,  
 And both adorn'd with lampes of flaming light, 171  
 All that behold fo strange prodigious fight,  
 Not knowing natures worke, nor what to weene,  
 Are rapt with wonder, and with rare affright.  
 So stood Sir *Marinell*, when he had seene  
 The semblant of this false by his faire beauties  
 Queene.

All which when *Artegall*, who all this while  
 Stood in the preasse close couered, well aduewed,  
 And saw that boasters pride and gracelesse guile,  
 He could no longer beare, but forth issued, 180  
 And vnto all himselfe there open shewed,  
 And to the boaster said; Thou lofell base,  
 That hast with borrowed plumes thy selfe endewed,  
 And others worth with leasings doest deface,  
 When they are all restor'd, thou shalt rest in disgrace. /

That shield, which thou doest beare, was it indeed,  
 Which this dayes honour sau'd to *Marinell*;  
 But not that arme, nor thou the man I reed,  
 Which didst that seruice vnto *Florimell*.  
 For prooue shew forth thy sword, and let it tell, 190  
 What strokes, what dreadfull stoure it stir'd this day:  
 Or shew the wounds, which vnto thee befell;  
 Or shew the sweat, with which thou diddest sway  
 So sharpe a battell, that so many did dismay.

ll. 177-8 (*who . . . couer'd*): *ib.*, 'aduewed' = 'ad veued,' which Upton suggested ('had veued.')

But this the sword, which wrought those cruell founds,  
 And this the arme, the which that shield did beare,  
 And these the signes, (so shewed forth his wounds)  
 By which that glorie gotten doth appeare.  
 As for this Ladie, which he sheweth here,  
 Is not (I wager) *Florimell* at all ; 200  
 But some fayre Franion, fit for such a fere,  
 That by misfortune in his hand did fall.  
 For prooffe whereof, he bad them *Florimell* forth call.

So forth the noble Ladie was ybrought,  
 Adorn'd with honor and all comely grace :  
 Whereto her bashfull shamefastnesse ywrought  
 A great increase in her faire blushing face ;  
 As roses did with lillies interlace.  
 For of those words, the which that boaster threw,  
 She inly yet conceiued great disgrace. 210  
 Whom when as all the people such did vew,  
 They shouted loud, and signes of gladnesse all did shew.

Then did he set her by that snowy one,  
 Like the true faint beside the image set ;  
 Of both their beauties to make paragone,  
 And triall, whether should the honor get.  
 Streight / way so foone as both together met,  
 Th'enchanted Damzell vanisht into nought :  
 Her snowy substance melted as with heat,  
 Ne of that goodly hew remayned ought, 220  
 But th'emptie girdle, which about her waist was wrought.

As when the daughter of *Thaumantes* faire,  
 Hath in a watry cloud displayed wide

Her goodly bow, which paints the liquid ayre,  
 That all men wonder at her colours pride ;  
 All suddenly, ere one can looke aside,  
 The glorious picture vaniseth away,  
 Ne any token doth thereof abide :  
 So did this Ladies goodly forme decay,  
 And into nothing goe, ere one could it bewray. 230

Which when as all that present were, beheld,  
 They stricken were with great astonishment,  
 And their faint harts with senselesse horror queld,  
 To see the thing, that seem'd so excellent,  
 So stolen from their fancies wonderment ;  
 That what of it became, none vnderstood.  
 And *Braggadocchio* felse with dreriment  
 So daunted was in his despeyring mood,  
 That like a lifelesse corse immoueable he stood.

But *Artegall* that golden belt vptooke, 240  
 The which of all her spoyle was onely left ;  
 Which was not hers, as many it mistooke,  
 But *Florimells* owne girdle, from her rest,  
 While she was flying, like a weary west,  
 From that foule monster, which did her compell  
 To perils great ; which he vn buckling eft,  
 Presented to the fayrest *Florimell* ;  
 Who round about her tender wast it fitted well. /

Full many Ladies often had assayd,  
 About their middles that faire belt to knit ; 250

l. 224, 'bow,' as before ; and, for ;—accepted.

And many a one suppos'd to be a mayd :  
 Yet it to none of all their loynes would fit,  
 Till *Florimell* about her fastned it.  
 Such power it had, that to no womans waft  
 By any skill or labour it would fit,  
 Vnlesse that she were continent and chaste,  
 But it would lose or breake, that many had disgraft.

Whilest thus they buſied were bout *Florimell*,  
 And boastfull *Braggadocchio* to defame,  
 Sir *Guyon* as by fortune then befell, 260  
 Forth from the thickest preasse of people came,  
 His owne good steed, which he had stolne, to clame ;  
 And th'one hand seizing on his golden bit,  
 With th'other drew his sword : for with the same  
 He ment the thiefe there deadly to haue smit :  
 And had he not bene held, he nought had fayld of it.

Thereof great hurly burly moued was  
 Throughout the hall, for that same warlike horse.  
 For *Braggadocchio* would not let him pas ;  
 And *Guyon* would him algates haue perforce, 270  
 Or it approue vpon his carrion corse.  
 Which troublous stirre when *Artegall* perceiued,  
 He nigh them drew, to stay th'auengers forse,  
 And gan inquire, how was that steed bereaued,  
 Whether by might extort, or else by flight deceaued.

Who all that piteous storie, which befell  
 About that wofull couple, which were slaine,  
 And their young bloodie babe to him gan tell ;  
 With whom whiles he did in the wood remaine,

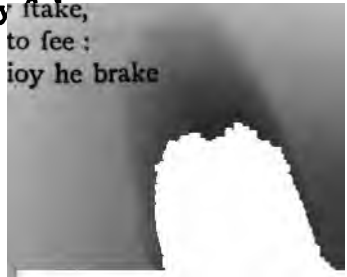
l. 260 (as . . . befell) : l. 273, , after 'drew'—accepted.

His / horfe purloyned was by subtyll traine : 280  
 For which he chalenged the thiefe to fight.  
 But he for nought could him thereto constraîne.  
 For as the death he hated such despight,  
 And rather had to lose, then trie in armes his right.

Which *Artegall* well hearing, though no more  
 By law of armes there neede ones right to trie,  
 As was the wont of warlike knights of yore,  
 Then that his foe should him the field denie,  
 Yet further right by tokens to descrye,  
 He askt, what priuie tokens he did beare. 290  
 If that (said *Guyon*) may you satisfie,  
 Within his mouth a blacke spot doth appeare,  
 Shapt like a horses shoe, who list to seeke it there.

Whereof to make due tryall, one did take  
 The horfe in hand, within his mouth to looke :  
 But with his heeles so forely he him strake,  
 That all his ribs he quite in peeces broke,  
 That neuer word from that day forth he spoke.  
 Another that would seeme to haue more wit,  
 Him by the bright embrodered hedstall tooke : 300  
 But by the shoulder him so sore he bit,  
 That he him maymed quite, and all his shoulder split.

Ne he his mouth would open vnto wight,  
 Vntill that *Guyon* felfe vnto him spake.  
 And called *Brigadore* (so was he hight)  
 Whose voice so soone as he did vndertake,  
 Eftsoones he stood as still as any stake,  
 And suffred all his secret marke to see :  
 And when as he him nam'd, for ioy he brake





His bands, and follow'd him with gladfull glee, 310  
And friskt, and flong aloft, and louted low on knee. /

Thereby Sir *Artegall* did plaine areed,  
That vnto him the horfe belong'd, and sayd ;  
Lo there Sir *Guyon*, take to you the steed,  
As he with golden faddell is arayd ;  
And let that losell, plainely now displayd,  
Hence fare on foot, till he an horfe haue gayned.  
But the proud boaster gan his doome vpbrayd,  
And him reuil'd, and rated, and disdayned,  
That iudgement so vniust against him had ordayned.

Much was the knight incenst with his lewd word, 321  
To haue reuenged that his villeny ;  
And thrife did lay his hand vpon his sword,  
To haue him flaine, or dearely doen aby.  
But *Guyon* did his choler pacify,  
Saying, Sir knight, it would dishonour bee  
To you, that are our iudge of equity,  
To wreake your wrath on such a carle as hee :  
It's punishment enough, that all his shame doe see.

So did he mitigate Sir *Artegall* ; 330  
But *Talus* by the backe the boaster hent,  
And drawing him out of the open hall,  
Vpon him did inflict this punishment.  
First he his beard did shaue, and fowly shent :  
Then from him rest his shield, and it renuerst,  
And blotted out his armes with falshood blent,  
And himselfe baffuld, and his armes vnherst,  
And broke his sword in twaine, and all his armour sperst.

l. 328, : —accepted : l. 330, ; for, —accepted : l. 335, 'renuerst.'

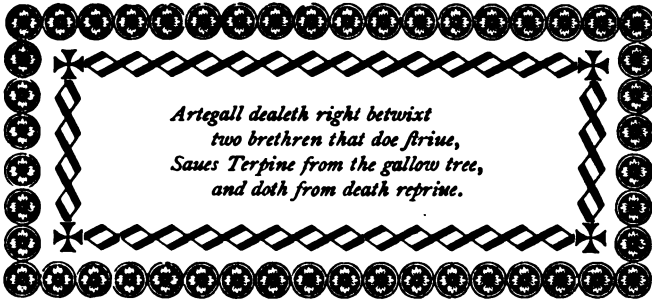
The whiles his guilefull groome was fled away :  
But vaine it was to thinke from him to flie. 340  
Who ouertaking him did difaray,  
And all his face deform'd with infamie,  
And / out of court him scourged openly.  
So ought all faytours, that true knighthood shame,  
And armes dishonour with base villanie,  
From all braue knights be banisht with defame :  
For oft their lewdnes blotteth good deferts with blame.

Now when these counterfeits were thus vncafed  
Out of the forefide of their forgerie,  
And in the sight of all men cleane disgraced, 350  
All gan to iest and gibe full merilie  
At the remembrance of their knauerie.  
Ladies can laugh at Ladies, Knights at Knights,  
To thinke with how great vaunt of brauerie  
He them abused, through his subtill flights,  
And what a glorious shew he made in all their fights.

There leaue we them in pleasure and repast,  
Spending their ioyous dayes and gladfull nights,  
And taking vsurie of time forepast,  
With all deare delices and rare delights, 360  
Fit for such Ladies and such louely knights :  
And turne we here to this faire furrowes end  
Our wearie yokes, to gather fresher sprights,  
That when as time to *Artegall* shall tend,  
We on his first aduenture may him forward send. /

l. 357 in '96 not brought out as usual : l. 362, '*we here*'—accepted for '*were here*' of '96.

## Cant. IIII.



VV Ho so vpon him selfe will take the skill  
 True Iustice vnto people to diuide,  
 Had neede haue mightie hands, for to fulfill  
 That, which he doth with righteous doome decide,  
 And for to maister wrong and puissant pride, 10  
 For vaine it is to deeme of things aright,  
 And makes wrong doers iustice to deride,  
 Vnlesse it be perform'd with dreadlesse might.  
 For powre is the right hand of Iustice truely hight.

Therefore whylome to knights of great emprise  
 The charge of Iustice giuen was in trust,  
 That they might execute her iudgements wise,  
 And with their might beat downe licentious lust,  
 Which proudly did impugne her sentence iust.  
 Whereof no brauer president this day 20  
 Remaines on earth, preferu'd from yron rust

l. 8, 'haue'—1611 needlessly 'improves' into 'of.'

Of rude obliuion, and long times decay,  
Then this of *Artegall*, which here we haue to fay.

Who hauing lately left that louely payre,  
Enlincked fast in wedlockes loyall bond,  
Bold *Marinell* with *Florimell* the fayre,  
With whom great feast and goodly glee he fond,  
Departed / from the Castle of the strond,  
To follow his aduentures first intent,  
Which long agoe he taken had in hond : 30  
Ne wight with him for his assistance went,  
But that great yron groome, his gard and gouernment.

With whom as he did passe by the sea shore,  
He chaunst to come, whereas two comely Squires,  
Both brethren, whom one wombe together bore,  
But stirred vp with different desires,  
Together stroue, and kindled wrathfull fires :  
And them beside two seemely damzels stood,  
By all meanes seeking to asswage their ires,  
Now with faire words ; but words did little good, 40  
Now with sharpe threats ; but threats the more increast  
their mood.

And there before them stood a Coffer strong,  
Fast bound on euery fide with iron bands,  
But seeming to haue suffred mickle wrong,  
Either by being wreckt vpon the sands,  
Or being carried farre from forraine lands.  
Seem'd that for it these Squires at ods did fall,  
And bent against them felues their cruell hands.

But euermore, those Damzels did forestall  
 Their furious encounter, and their fiercenesse pall. 50

But firmly fixt they were, with dint of sword,  
 And battailes doubtfull prooffe their rights to try,  
 Ne other end their fury would afford,  
 But what to them Fortune would iustify.  
 So stood they both in readinesse : thereby  
 To ioyne the combate with cruell intent ;  
 When *Astegall* arriuing happily,  
 Did stay a while there greedy bickermment,  
 Till he had questioned the cause of their diffent. /

To whom the elder did this aunfwere frame ; 60  
 Then weete ye Sir, that we two brethren be,  
 To whom our fire, *Milefio* by name,  
 Did equally bequeath his lands in fee,  
 Two Ilands, which ye there before you see  
 Not farre in sea ; of which the one appears  
 But like a little Mount of small degree ;  
 Yet was as great and wide ere many yeares,  
 As that fame other Isle, that greater bredth now beares.

But tract of time, that all things doth decay,  
 And this deuouring Sea, that naught doth spare, 70  
 The most part of my land hath washt away,  
 And throwne it vp vnto my brothers share :  
 So his encreafed, but mine did empaire.  
 Before which time I lou'd, as was my lot,  
 That further mayd, hight *Philtera* the faire,

l. 55, 'in readinesse there-by.'

With whom a goodly doure I should haue got,  
And should haue ioyned bene to her in wedlocks knot.

Then did my younger brother *Amidas*  
Loue that same other Damzell, *Lucy* bright,  
To whom but little dowre allotted was ; 80  
Her vertue was the dowre, that did delight.  
What better dowre can to a dame be hight ?  
But now when *Philtr*a saw my lands decay,  
And former liuelod fayle, she left me quight,  
And to my brother did ellope streight way :  
Who taking her from me, his owne loue left astray.

She seeing then her selfe forsaken so,  
Through dolorous despaire, which she conceyued,  
Into the Sea her selfe did headlong throw,  
Thinking to haue her grieve by death bercaued. 90  
But / see how much her purpose was deceaued.  
Whilest thus amidst the billowes beating of her  
Twixt life and death, long to and fro she weaued,  
She chaunst vnwares to light vppon this coffer,  
Which to her in that daunger hope of life did offer.

The wretched mayd that earst desir'd to die,  
When as the paine of death she tasted had,  
And but halfe seene his vgly visnomic,  
Gan to repent that she had beene so mad,  
For any death to chaunge life though most bad :  
And catching hold of this Sea-beaten chest, 101  
The lucky Pylot of her passage fad,

After long toffing in the seas diftreft,  
Her weary barke at laft vppon mine Ifle did reft.

Where I by chaunce then wandring on the fhore,  
Did her efpy, and through my good endeouour  
From dreadfull mouth of death, which threatned fore  
Her to haue fwallow'd vp, did helpe to faue her.  
She then in recompence of that great fauour, 110  
Which I on her beftowed, beftowed on me  
The portion of that good, which Fortune gaue her,  
Together with her felfe in dowry free ;  
Both goodly portions, but of both the better ſhe.

Yet in this coffer, which ſhe with her brought,  
Great threafure fithence we did finde contained ;  
Which as our owne we tooke, and fo it thought.  
But this fame other Damzell ſince hath fained,  
That to her felfe that threafure appertained ;  
And that ſhe did transport the fame by fea,  
To bring it to her husband new ordained, 120  
But fuffred cruell ſhipwracke by the way.  
But whether it be fo or no, I can not fay. /

But whether it indeede be fo or no,  
This doe I fay, that what ſo good or ill  
Or God or Fortune vnto me did throw,  
Not wronging any other by my will,  
I hold mine owne, and ſo will hold it ſtill.  
And though my land he firſt did winne away,  
And then my loue (though now it little ſkill,)

Yet my good lucke he shall not likewise pray ; 130  
But I will it defend, whilst euer that I may.

So hauing sayd, the younger did enfew ;  
Full true it is, what so about our land  
My brother here declared hath to you :  
But not for it this ods twixt vs doth stand,  
But for this threasure throwne vppon his strand ;  
Which well I proue, as shall appeare by triall,  
To be this maides, with whom I fastned hand,  
Known by good markes, and perfect good espiall,  
Therefore it ought be rendred her without deniall. 140

When thus they ended had, the Knight began ;  
Certes your strife were easie to accord,  
Would ye remit it to some righteous man.  
Vnto your selfe, said they, we giue our word,  
To bide what iudgement ye shall vs afford.  
Then for assuraunce to my doome to stand,  
Vnder my foote let each lay downe his sword,  
And then you shall my sentence vnderstand.  
So each of them layd downe his sword out of his hand.

Then *Artegall* thus to the younger sayd ; 150  
Now tell me *Amidas*, if that ye may,  
Your brothers land the which the sea hath layd  
Vnto your part, and pluckt from his away,  
By / what good right doe you withhold this day ?  
What other right (quoth he) should you esteeme,  
But that the sea it to my share did lay ?  
Your right is good (sayd he) and so I deeme,  
That what the sea vnto you sent, your own should seeme.



Then turning to the elder thus he sayd ;  
 Now *Bracidas* let this likewise be showne. 160  
 Your brothers threasure, which from him is strayd,  
 Being the dowry of his wife well knowne,  
 By what right doe you claime to be your owne ?  
 What other right (quoth he) should you esteeme,  
 But that the sea hath it vnto me throwne ?  
 Your right is good (sayd he) and so I deeme,  
 That what the sea vnto you sent, your own should seeme.

For equall right in equall things doth stand,  
 For what the mighty Sea hath once posselt,  
 And plucked quite from all possessors hand, 170  
 Whether by rage of waues, that neuer rest,  
 Or else by wracke, that wretches hath distrest,  
 He may dispose by his imperiall might,  
 As thing at randon left, to whom he list.  
 So *Amidas*, the land was yours first hight,  
 And so the threasure yours is *Bracidas* by right.

When he his sentence thus pronounced had,  
 Both *Amidas* and *Philtra* were displeased :  
 But *Bracidas* and *Lucy* were right glad,  
 And on the threasure by that iudgement seased. 180  
 So was their discord by this doome appeased,  
 And each one had his right. Then *Artegall*  
 When as their sharpe contention he had ceased,  
 Departed on his way, as did befall,  
 To follow his old quest, the which him forth did call.

So as he trauelled vppon the way,  
 He chaunst to come, where happily he spide

A rout of many people farre away ;  
To whom his course he hastily applide,  
To weete the cause of their assemblaunce wide. 190  
To whom when he approched neare in fight,  
(An vncouth fight) he plainely then descride  
To be a troupe of women warlike dight,  
With weapons in their hands, as ready for to fight.

And in the midft of them he saw a Knight,  
With both his hands behinde him pinnoed hard,  
And round about his necke an halter tight,  
As ready for the gallow tree prepar'd :  
His face was couered, and his head was bar'd,  
That who he was, vneath was to descry ; 200  
And with full heauy heart with them he far'd,  
Grieu'd to the foule, and groning inwardly,  
That he of womens hands so base a death should dy.

But they like tyrants, mercileffe the more,  
Reioyced at his miserable case,  
And him reuiled, and reproched fore  
With bitter taunts, and termes of vile disgrace.  
Now when as *Artegall* arriu'd in place,  
Did aske, what cause brought that man to decay,  
They round about him gan to swarme apace, 210  
Meaning on him their cruell hands to lay,  
And to haue wrought vnwares some villanous affay.

But he was soone aware of their ill minde,  
And drawing backe deceiued their intent ;

Yet though him selfe did shame on womankinde  
 His mighty hand to shend, he *Talus* sent  
 To / wrecke on them their follies hardyment :  
 Who with few fowces of his yron flale,  
 Disperfed all their troupe incontinent,  
 And sent them home to tell a piteous tale, 220  
 Of their vaine prowesse, turned to their proper bale.

But that same wretched man, ordaynd to die,  
 They left behind them, glad to be so quit :  
 Him *Talus* tooke out of perplexitie,  
 And horroure of fowle death for Knight vnfit,  
 Who more then losse of life ydreaded it ;  
 And him restoring vnto liuing light,  
 So brought vnto his Lord, where he did sit,  
 Beholding all that womanish weake fight ;  
 Whom soone as he beheld, he knew, and thus behight.

Sir *Turpine*, haplesse man, what make you here ? 231  
 Or haue you lost your selfe, and your discretion,  
 That euer in this wretched case ye were ?  
 Or haue ye yeelded you to proude oppression  
 Of womens powre, that boast of mens subiection ?  
 Or else what other deadly dismall day  
 Is false on you, by heauens hard direction,  
 That ye were runne so fondly far astray,  
 As for to lead your selfe vnto your owne decay ?

Much was the man confounded in his mind, 240  
 Partly with shame, and partly with dismay,  
 That all astonisht he him selfe did find,  
 And little had for his excuse to say,

But onely thus ; Most haplesse well ye may  
Me iustly terme, that to this shame am brought,  
And made the scorne of Knighthod this same day.  
But who can scape, what his owne fate hath wrought ?  
The worke of heauens will surpasse humane thought. /

Right true : but faulty men vse oftentimes  
To attribute their folly vnto fate, 250  
And lay on heauen the guilt of their owne crimes.  
But tell, Sir *Terpin*, ne let you amate  
Your misery, how fell ye in this state.  
Then sith ye needs (quoth he) will know my shame,  
And all the ill, which chaunst to me of late,  
I shortly will to you rehearse the same,  
In hope ye will not turne misfortune to my blame.

Being desirous (as all Knights are woont)  
Through hard aduentures deedes of armes to try,  
And after fame and honour for to hunt, 260  
I heard report that farre abroad did fly,  
That a proud Amazon did late defy  
All the braue Knights, that hold of Maidenhead,  
And vnto them wrought all the villany,  
That she could forge in her malicious head,  
Which some hath put to shame, and many done be dead.

The cause, they say, of this her cruell hate,  
Is for the sake of *Belldant* the bold,  
To whom she bore most feruent loue of late,  
And wooed him by all the waies she could : 270  
But when she saw at last, that he ne would  
For ought or nought be wonne vnto her will,  
She turn'd her loue to hatred manifold,

And for his fake vow'd to doe all the ill  
Which she could doe to Knights, which now she doth  
fulfill.

For all those Knights, the which by force or guile  
She doth subdue, she fowly doth entreate.  
First she doth them of warlike armes despoile,  
And cloth in womens weedes : And then with threat  
Doth / them compell to worke, to earne their meat,  
To spin, to card, to sew, to wash, to wring; 281  
Ne doth she giue them other thing to eat,  
But bread and water, or like feeble thing,  
Them to disable from reuenge aduenturing.

But if through stout disdaine of manly mind,  
Any her proud obseruance will withstand,  
Vppon that gibbet, which is there behind,  
She causeth them be hang'd vp out of hand ;  
In which condition I right now did stand.  
For being ouercome by her in fight, 290  
And put to that base seruice of her band,  
I rather chose to die in liues despight,  
Then lead that shamefull life, vnworthy of a Knight.

How hight that Amazon (sayd *Artegall* ?)  
And where, and how far hence does she abide ?  
Her name (quoth he) they *Radigund* doe call,  
A Princeesse of great powre, and greater pride,  
And Queene of Amazons, in armes well tride,  
And fundry battels, which she hath atchieued  
With great successe, that her hath glorified, 300  
And made her famous, more then is believed ;  
Ne would I it haue ween'd, had I not late it priued.

Now fure (said he) and by the faith that I  
 To Maydenhead and noble knighthood owe,  
 I will not rest, till I her might doe trie,  
 And venge the shame, that she to Knights doth show.  
 Therefore Sir *Terpin* from you lightly throw  
 This squalid weede, the patterne of dispaire,  
 And wend with me, that ye may see and know,  
 How Fortune will your ruin'd name repaire, 310  
 And knights of Maidenhead, whose praise she would  
 empaire. /

With that, like one that hopelesse was repy'ud  
 From deathes dore, at which he lately lay,  
 Those yron fetters, wherewith he was gyu'd,  
 The badges of reproch, he threw away,  
 And nimbly did him dight to guide the way  
 Vnto the dwelling of that Amazone,  
 Which was from thence not past a mile or tway :  
 A goodly citty and a mighty one,  
 The which of her owne name she called *Radigone*. 320

Where they arriuing, by the watchmen were  
 Defcried streight ; who all the citty warned,  
 How that three warlike persons did appeare,  
 Of which the one him seem'd a Knight all armed,  
 And th'other two well likely to haue harmed.  
 Eftsoones the people all to harnesse ran,  
 And like a sort of Bees in clusters swarmed :  
 Ere long their Queene her selfe halfe like a man  
 Came forth into the rout, and them t'array began.

l. 321, 'watchman': l. 322, ; for,—accepted: l. 325, 'arm'd': l. 328,  
 , here removed after 'halfe.'

And now the Knights being arriued neare, 330  
 Did beat vppon the gates to enter in,  
 And at the Porter, skorning them so few,  
 Threw many threats, if they the towne did win,  
 To teare his flesh in peeces for his fin.  
 Which when as *Radigund* there comming heard,  
 Her heart for rage did grate, and teeth did grin :  
 She bad that streight the gates should be vnbar'd,  
 And to them way to make, with weapons well prepar'd.

Soone as the gates were open to them fet,  
 They pressed forward, entraunce to haue made. 340  
 But in the middle way they were ymet,  
 With a sharpe showre of arrowes, which them staid,  
 And / better bad aduise, ere they affaid  
 Vnknownen perill of bold womens pride.  
 Then all that rout vppon them rudely laid,  
 And heaped strokes so fast on euery side,  
 And arrowes haild so thicke, that they could not abide.

But *Radigund* her selfe, when she espide  
 Sir *Terpin*, from her direfull doome acquit,  
 So cruell doile amongst her maides dauide, 350  
 T'auenge that shame, they did on him commit ;  
 All fodainely inflam'd with furious fit,  
 Like a fell Lioneffe at him she flew,  
 And on his head-peece him so fiercely fmit,

l. 332, Dr. Morris annotates " 'so few' (so all copies). Church proposed to alter 'neare in,' in l. 1, to 'new,' so as to rhyme with 'few.' Mr. J. P. Collier proposes to read 'to feare, instead of 'so few,' thus making a suitable rhyme for 'neare.' " All very ingenious tinkering ; but it must be repeated Spenser shews repeatedly such neglects, and was no Purist : l. 335. 1611 of course corrects into 'their' : l. 350, 'doale . . . divide' : l. 351, ; for ,—accepted.

That to the ground him quite she ouerthrew,  
Dismayd so with the stroke, that he no colours knew.

Soone as she saw him on the ground to grouell,  
She lightly to him leapt, and in his necke  
Her proud foote setting, at his head did leuell,  
Weening at once her wrath on him to wreake, 360  
And his contempt, that did her iudg'ment breake.  
As when a Beare hath seiz'd her cruell clawes  
Vppon the carkasse of some beaft too weake,  
Proudly stands ouer, and a while doth pause,  
To heare the piteous beaft pleading her plaintiffe cause.

Whom when as *Artegall* in that distresse  
By chaunce beheld, he left the bloody slaughter,  
In which he swam, and ranne to his redresse.  
There her assayling fiercely fresh, he raught her  
Such an huge stroke, that it of fence diftraught her :  
And had she not it warded warily, 370  
It had depriu'd her mother of a daughter.  
Nathlesse for all the powre she did apply,  
It made her stagger oft, and stare with ghastly eye. /

Like to an Eagle in his kingly pride,  
Soring through his wide Empire of the aire,  
To weather his brode sailes, by chaunce hath spide  
A Goshauke, which hath feized for her share  
Vppon some fowle, that should her feast prepare ;  
With dreadfull force he flies at her byliue, 380  
That with his souce, which none endure dare,  
Her from the quarrey he away doth driue,  
And from her griping pounce the greedy prey doth riue,



But foone as she her fence recouer'd had,  
 She fiercely towards him her selfe gan dight,  
 Through vengeful wrath & sdeignfull pride half mad :  
 For neuer had she suffred such despight.  
 But ere she could ioine hand with him to fight,  
 Her warlike maides about her flockt so fast,  
 That they disparted them, maugre their might, 390  
 And with their troupes did far a sunder cast :  
 But mongst the rest the fight did vntill euening last.

And euery while that mighty yron man,  
 With his strange weapon, neuer wont in warre,  
 Them forely vext, and court, and ouerran,  
 And broke their bowes, and did their shooting marre,  
 That none of all the many once did darre  
 Him to assault, nor once approach him nie,  
 But like a sort of sheepe disperfed farre  
 For dread of their deuouringemie, 400  
 Through all the fields and vallies did before him flie.

But when as daies faire shinie-beame, yclowded  
 With fearefull shadowes of deformed night,  
 Warn'd man and beast in quiet rest be shrowded,  
 Bold *Radigund* with sound of trumpe on hight,  
 Causd / all her people to surcease from fight,  
 And gathering them vnto her citties gate,  
 Made them all enter in before her fight,  
 And all the wounded, and the weake in state,  
 To be conuayed in, ere she would once retrate. 410

When thus the field was voided all away,  
 And all things quieted, the Elfin Knight

l. 405, (*with . . . hight*),

Weary of toile and trauell of that day,  
 Cauſd his pauillion to be richly pight  
 Before the city gate, in open fight ;  
 Where he him ſelfe did reſt in ſafety,  
 Together with ſir *Terpin* all that night :  
 But *Talus* vſde in times of ieopardy  
 To keepe a nightly watch, for dread of treachery.

But *Radigund* full of heart-gnawing grieve, 420  
 For the rebuke, which ſhe ſuſtain'd that day,  
 Could take no reſt, ne would receiue reliefe,  
 But toſſed in her troublous mind, what way  
 She mote reuenge that blot, which on her lay.  
 There ſhe reſolu'd her ſelfe in ſingle fight  
 To try her Fortune, and his force aſſay,  
 Rather then ſee her people ſpoiled quight,  
 As ſhe had ſeene that day a diſauenterous fight.

She called forth to her a truſty mayd,  
 Whom ſhe thought fitteſt for that buſineſſe, 430  
 Her name was *Clarin*, and thus to her ſayd ;  
 Goe damzell quickly, doe thy ſelfe addreſſe,  
 To doe the meſſage, which I ſhall expreſſe.  
 Goe thou vnto that ſtranger Faery Knight,  
 Who yeeſter day droue vs to ſuch diſtreſſe,  
 Tell, that to morrow I with him wil fight,  
 And try in equall field, whether hath greater might./

But theſe conditions doe to him propound,  
 That if I vanquiſhe him, he ſhall obay  
 My law, and euer to my lore be bound ; 440  
 And ſo will I, if me he vanquiſh may,

l. 413 within ( ) : l. 431, '*Clarind*' : l. 440, ; for , and l. 441, , for ;  
 —accepted.

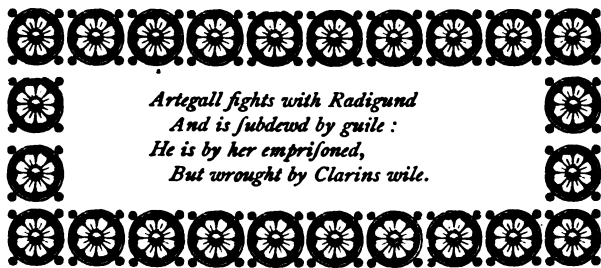
What euer he shall like to doe or fay.  
 Goe streight, and take with thee, to witnesse it,  
 Sixe of thy fellowes of the best array,  
 And beare with you both wine and iuncates fit,  
 And bid him eate ; henceforth he oft shall hungry fit.

The Damzell streight obayd, and putting all  
 In readinesse, forth to the Towne-gate went ;  
 Where founding loud a Trumpet from the wall,  
 Vnto those warlike Knights she warning sent. 450  
 Then *Talus* forth issuing from the tent,  
 Vnto the wall his way did searelesse take,  
 To weeten what that trumpets founding ment :  
 Where that fame Damzell lowdly him bespake,  
 And shew'd, that with his Lord she would emparlaunce  
 make.

So he them streight conducted to his Lord,  
 Who, as he could, them goodly well did greete,  
 Till they had told their message word by word :  
 Which he accepting well, as he could weete,  
 Them fairely entertaynd with curt'sies meete, 460  
 And gaue them gifts and things of deare delight.  
 So backe againe they homeward turnd their feete.  
 But *Artegal* him selfe to rest did dight,  
 That he mote fresher be against the next daies fight.

l. 446, ; for , ; and so l. 448 : l. 455, 'emperlance'

## Cant. / V.



S O soone as day forth dawning from the East,  
 Nights humid curtaine from the heauens withdrew,  
 And earely calling forth both man and beast,  
 Comaunded them their daily workes renew,  
 These noble warriors, mindefull to pursfew 10  
 The last daies purpose of their vowed fight,  
 Them selues thereto preparede in order dew;  
 The Knight, as best was seeming for a Knight,  
 And th'Amazon, as best it likt her selfe to dight.

All in a Camis light of purple filke  
 Wouen vppon with siluer, subtlly wrought,  
 And quilted vppon sattin white as milke,  
 Trayled with ribbands diuersly distraught  
 Like as the workeman had their courses taught;  
 Which was short tucked for light motion 20  
 Vp to her ham, but when she list, it raught

l. 5, 'Clarinds.'

Downe to her lowest heele, and thereuppon  
She wore for her defence a mayled habergeon.

And on her legs she painted buskins wore,  
Basted with bends of gold on euery side,  
And mailes betweene, and laced close afore :  
Vppon her thigh her Cemitare was tide, /  
With an embrodered belt of mickell pride ;  
And on her shoulder hung her shield, bedeckt  
Vppon the bosse with stones, that shined wide, 30  
As the faire Moone in her most full aspect,  
That to the Moone it mote be like in each respect.

So forth she came out of the citty gate,  
With stately port and proud magnificence,  
Guarded with many damzels, that did waite  
Vppon her person for her sure defence,  
Playing on shaumes and trumpets, that from hence  
Their sound did reach vnto the heauens hight.  
So forth into the field she marched thence,  
Where was a rich Pauilion ready pight, 40  
Her to receiue, till time they should begin the fight.

Then forth came *Artegall* out of his tent,  
All arm'd to point, and first the Lifts did enter :  
Soone after eke came she, with fell intent,  
And countenance fierce, as hauing fully bent her,  
That battels vtmost triall to aduenter.  
The Lifts were closed fast, to barre the 'rout  
From rudely preffing to the middle center ;  
Which in great heapes them circled all about,  
Wayting, how Fortune would resolue that daungerous  
dout. 50

The Trumpets sounded and the field began ;  
 With bitter strokes it both began, and ended.  
 She at the first encounter on him ran  
 With furious rage, as if she had intended  
 Out of his breast the very heart haue rended :  
 But he that had like tempests often tride,  
 From that first flaw him selfe right well defended.  
 The more she rag'd, the more he did abide ;  
 She hewd, she foynd, she lasht, she laid on euery  
 side.

Yet / still her blowes he bore, and her forbore,      60  
 Weening at last to win aduantage new ;  
 Yet still her crueltie increafed more,  
 And though powre faild, her courage did accrew :  
 Which sayling he gan fiercely her pursfew.  
 Like as a Smith that to his cunning feat  
 The stubborne mettall seeketh to subdew,  
 Soone as he feeles it mollifide with heat,  
 With his great yron sledge doth strongly on it beat.

So did Sir *Artegall* vpon her lay,  
 As if she had an yron anduile beene,      70  
 That flakes of fire, bright as the funny ray,  
 Out of her steely armes were flashing seene,  
 That all on fire ye would her surely weene.  
 But with her shield so well her selfe she warded,  
 From the dread daunger of his weapon keene,  
 That all that while her life she safely garded :  
 But he that helpe from her against her will discarded.

l. 63, : for, —accepted.



For with his trenchant blade at the next blow  
Halfe of her shield he shared quite away,  
That halfe her side it felfe did naked show, 80  
And thenceforth vnto daunger opened way.  
Much was she moued with the mightie fway  
Of that sad stroke, that halfe enrag'd she grew,  
And like a greedie Beare vnto her pray,  
With her sharpe Cemitare at him she flew, (drew.  
That glauncing downe his thigh, the purple bloud forth

Thereat she gan to triumph with great boast,  
And to vpbrayd that chaunce, which him misfell,  
As if the prize she gotten had almost,  
With spightfull speaches, fitting with her well ; / 90  
That his great hart gan inwardly to swell  
With indignation, at her vaunting vaine,  
And at her strooke with puiffance fearefull fell ;  
Yet with her shield she warded it againe,  
That shattered all to peeces round about the plaine.

Hauing her thus difarmed of her shield,  
Vpon her helmet he againe her strooke,  
That downe she fell vpon the graffie field;  
In sencelesse swoune, as if her life forfooke,  
And pangs of death her spirit ouertooke. 100  
Whom when he saw before his foote prostrated,  
He to her lept with deadly dreadfull looke,  
And her sunshynie helmet soone unlaced,  
Thinking at once both head and helmet to haue raced.

But when as he discouered had her face,  
He saw his senses straunge astonishment,

A miracle of natures goodly grace,  
In her faire visage voide of ornament,  
But bath'd in bloud and sweat together ment ;  
Which in the rudenesse of that euill plight, 110  
Bewrayd the signes of feature excellent :  
Like as the Moone in foggie winters night,  
Doth seeme to be her selfe, though darkned be her light.

At fight thereof his cruell minded hart  
Empierced was with pittifull regard,  
That his sharpe sword he threw from him apart,  
Curfing his hand that had that visage mard :  
No hand so cruell, nor no hart so hard,  
But ruth of beautie will it mollifie.  
By this vpstarting from her swoone, she star'd 120  
A while about her with confused eye ;  
Like one that from his dreame is waked suddenlye.

Soone / as the knight she there by her did spy,  
Standing with emptie hands all weaponlesse,  
With fresh assault vpon him she did fly,  
And gan renew her former cruelnesse :  
And though he still retyr'd, yet nathelesse  
With huge redoubled strokes she on him layd ;  
And more increast her outrage mercilesse,  
The more that he with meeke intreatie prayd, 130  
Her wrathful hand from greedy vengeance to haue stayd.

Like as a Puttocke hauing spyde in fight  
A gentle Faulcon fitting on an hill,  
Whose other wing, now made vnmeete for flight,  
Was lately broken by some fortune ill ;



The foolish Kyte, led with licentious will,  
 Doth beat vpon the gentle bird in vaine,  
 With many idle stoups her troubling still :  
 Euen so did *Radigund* with bootlesse paine  
 Annoy this noble Knight, and forely him constraine.

Nought could he do, but shun the dred despight 141  
 Of her fierce wrath, and backward still retyre,  
 And with his sngle shield, well as he might,  
 Beare off the burden of her raging yre ;  
 And euermore he gently did desyre,  
 To stay her stroks, and he himselfe would yield :  
 Yet nould she hearke, ne let him once respyre,  
 Till he to her deliuered had his shield,  
 And to her mercie him submitted in plaine field.

So was he ouercome, not ouercome, 150  
 But to her yeelded of his owne accord ;  
 Yet he was iustly damned by the doome  
 Of his owne mouth, that spake so warelesse word, /  
 To be her thrall, and seruice her afford.  
 For though that he first victorie obtayned,  
 Yet after by abandoning his sword,  
 He wilfull lost, that he before attayned.  
 No fayrer conquest, then that with goodwill is gayned.

Tho with her sword on him she flatling strooke,  
 In signe of true subiection to her powre, 160  
 And as her vassall him to thraldome tooke.  
 But *Terpine* borne to'a more vnhappy howe,  
 As he, on whom the lucklesse starres did lowre,  
 She cauld to be attacht, and forthwith led  
 Vnto the crooke t'abide the balefull stowre,

From which he lately had through reskew fled :  
Where he full shamefully was hanged by the hed.

But when they thought on *Talus* hands to lay,  
He with his yron flaile amongst them thondred,  
That they were fayne to let him scape away, 170  
Glad from his companie to be so sondred ;  
Whose presence all their troupes so much encombred  
That th'heapes of those, which he did wound and slay,  
Besides the rest dismayd, might not be nombred :  
Yet all that while he would not once assay,  
To reskew his owne Lord, but thought it iust t'obay.

Then tooke the Amazon this noble knight,  
Left to her will by his owne wilfull blame,  
And caused him to be disarmed quight,  
Of all the ornaments of knightly name, 180  
With which whylome he gotten had great fame :  
In stead whereof she made him to be dight  
In womans weedes, that is to manhood shame,  
And put before his lap an apron white,  
In stead of Curiets and bafes fit for fight.

So / being clad, she brought him from the field,  
In which he had bene trayned many a day,  
Into a long large chamber, which was field  
With monuments of many knights decay,  
By her subdewed in victorious fray : 190  
Amongst the which she caufd his warlike armes  
Be hang'd on high, that mote his shame bewray ;  
And broke his sword, for feare of further harmes,  
With which he wont to stirre vp battailous alarmes.

1. 188, 'field' = *ceil'd*—sic in '96 and 1609, *not* = *fill'd*.

There entred in, he round about him faw  
 Many braue knights, whose names right well he knew,  
 There bound t'obay that Amazons proud law,  
 Spinning and carding all in comely rew,  
 That his bigge hart loth'd so vncomely vew.  
 But they were forst through penurie and pyne, 200  
 To doe those workes, to them appointed dew :  
 For nought was giuen them to sup or dyne,  
 But what their hands could earne by twisting linnen  
 twyne.

Amongst them all she placed him most low,  
 And in his hand a distaffe to him gaue,  
 That he thereon should spin both flax and tow ;  
 A fordid office for a mind so braue.  
 So hard it is to be a womans slaue.  
 Yet he it tooke in his owne selfes despight,  
 And thereto did himselfe right well behaue, 210  
 Her to obay, fith he his faith had plight,  
 Her vassall to become, if she him wonne in fight.

Who had him seene, imagine mote thereby,  
 That whylome hath of *Hercules* bene told,  
 How for *Iolas* sake he did apply  
 His mightie hands, the distaffe vile to hold, /  
 For his huge club, which had subdew'd of old  
 So many monsters, which the world annoyed ;  
 His Lyons skin chaungd to a pall of gold,  
 In which forgetting warres, he onely ioyed 220  
 In combats of sweet loue, and with his mistresse toyed.

Such is the crueltie of womenkynd,  
 When they haue shaken off the shamesfast band,

With which wife Nature did them strongly bynd,  
 T'obay the heafte of mans well ruling hand,  
 That then all rule and reason they withstand,  
 To purchase a licentious libertie.  
 But vertuous women wisely vnderstand,  
 That they were borne to base humilitie,  
 Vnlesse the heauens them lift to lawfull soueraintie. 230

Thus there long while continu'd *Artegall*,  
 Seruing proud *Radigund* with true subiection ;  
 How euer it his noble heart did gall,  
 T'obay a womans tyrannous direction,  
 That might haue had of life or death election :  
 But hauing chofen, now he might not chaunge.  
 During which time, the warlike Amazon,  
 Whose wandring fancie after lust did raunge,  
 Gan cast a secret liking to this captiue straunge.

Which long concealing in her couert breft, 240  
 She chaw'd the cud of louers carefull plight ;  
 Yet could it not so thoroughly digest,  
 Being fast fixed in her wounded spright,  
 But it tormented her both day and night :  
 Yet would she not thereto yeeld free accord,  
 To serue the lowly vassall of her might,  
 And of her seruant make her souerayne Lord :  
 So great her pride, that she such basenesse much  
 abhord.

So / much the greater still her anguish grew,  
 Through stubborne handling of her loue-sicke hart ;  
 And still the more she stroue it to subdew, 251  
 The more she still augmented her owne smart,

And wyder made the wound of th'hidden dart.  
 At last when long she struggled had in vaine,  
 She gan to stoupe, and her proud mind conuert  
 To meeke obeyfance of loues mightie raine,  
 And him entreat for grace, that had procur'd her paine.

Vnto her selfe in secret she did call  
 Her nearest handmayd, whom she most did trust,  
 And to her said ; *Clarinda* whom of all 260  
 I trust a liue, fith I thee softred first ;  
 Now is the time, that I vntimely must  
 Thereof make tryall, in my greatest need :  
 It is so hapned, that the heauens vniust,  
 Spighting my happie freedome, haue agreed,  
 To thrall my looser life, or my last bale to breed.

With that she turn'd her head, as halfe abashed,  
 To hide the blush which in her visage rose,  
 And through her eyes like sudden lightning flashed,  
 Decking her cheeke with a vermilion rose : 270  
 But soone she did her countenance compose,  
 And to her turning, thus began againe ;  
 This griefes deepe wound I would to thee disclose,  
 Thereto compelled through hart-murdring paine,  
 But dread of shame my doubtfull lips doth still restraints.

Ah my deare dread (said then the faithfull Mayd)  
 Can dread of ought your dreadlesse hart withhold,  
 That many hath with dread of death dismayd,  
 And dare euen deathes most dreadfull face behold ? /  
 Say on my fouerayne Ladie, and be bold ; 280  
 Doth not your handmayds life at your foot lie ?  
 Therewith much comforted, she gan vnfold

The cause of her conceiued maladie,  
As one that would confesse, yet faine would it denie.

*Clarín* (sayd she) thou see'st yond Fayry Knight,  
Whom not my valour, but his owne braue mind  
Subiected hath to my vnequall might ;  
What right is it, that he should thraldome find,  
For lending life to me a wretch vnkind ;  
That for such good him recompence with ill ?      290  
Therefore I cast, how I may him vnbind,  
And by his freedome get his free goodwill ;  
Yet so, as bound to me he may continue still.

Bound vnto me, but not with such hard bands  
Of strong compulsion, and streight violence,  
As now in miserable state he stands ;  
But with sweet loue and fure beneuolence,  
Voide of malicious mind, or foule offence.  
To which if thou canst win him any way,  
Without discouerie of my thoughts pretence,      300  
Both goodly meede of him it purchase may,  
And eke with gratefull seruice me right well apay.

Which that thou mayst the better bring to pas,  
Loe here this ring which shall thy warrant bee,  
And token true to old *Eumenias*,  
From time to time, when thou it best shalt see,  
That in and out thou mayst haue passage free.  
Goe now, *Clarinda*, well thy wits aduise,  
And all thy forces gather vnto thee ;

Armies of louely lookes, and speeches wife, 310  
 With which thou canst euen *Ioue* himselfe to loue entife.

The / trustie Mayd, conceiuing her intent,  
 Did with sure promise of her good indeuour,  
 Giue her great comfort, and some harts content.  
 So from her parting, she thenceforth did labour  
 By all the meanes she might, to curry fauour  
 With th'Elfin Knight, her Ladies best beloued ;  
 With daily shew of courteous kind behauour,  
 Euen at the markewhite of his hart she roued,  
 And with wide glauncing words, one day she thus him  
 proued.

Vnhappie Knight, vpon whose hopelesse state 321  
 Fortune enuying good, hath felly frowned,  
 And cruell heauens haue heapt an heauy fate ;  
 I rew that thus thy better dayes are drowned  
 In sad despaire, and all thy senses fwowned  
 In stupid sorow, sith thy iuster merit  
 Might else haue with felicitie bene crowned :  
 Looke vp at last, and wake thy dulled spirit,  
 To thinke how this long death thou mightest disinherit.

Much did he maruell at her vncouth speach, 330  
 Whose hidden drift he could not well perceiue ;  
 And gan to doubt, least she him fought t'appeach  
 Of treason, or some guilefull traine did weaue,  
 Through which she might his wretched life bereaue.  
 Both which to barre, he with this answere met her ;  
 Faire Damzell, that with ruth (as I perceaued)  
 Of my mishaps, art mou'd to wish me better,  
 For such your kind regard, I can but rest your detter.

Yet weet ye well, that to a courage great  
 It is no lesse befeeming well, to beare 340  
 The storme of fortunes frowne, or heauens threat,  
 Then in the sunshine of her countenance cleare /  
 Timely to ioy, and carrie comely cheare.  
 For though this cloud haue now me ouercast,  
 Yet doe I not of better times despeyre ;  
 And, though vnlike, they should for euer last,  
 Yet in my truthes assurance I rest fixed fast.

But what so stonie mind (she then replyde)  
 But if in his owne powre occasion lay,  
 Would to his hope a windowe open wyde, 350  
 And to his fortunes helpe make readie way ?  
 Vnworthy fure (quoth he) of better day,  
 That will not take the offer of good hope,  
 And eke purfew, if he attaine it may.  
 Which speaches she applying to the scope  
 Of her intent, this further purpose to him shope.

Then why doest not, thou ill aduized man,  
 Make meanes to win thy libertie forlorne,  
 And try if thou by faire entreatie, can  
 Moue *Radigund* ? who though she still haue worne  
 Her dayes in warre, yet (weet thou) was not borne  
 Of Beares and Tygres, nor so saluage mynded, 362  
 As that, albe all loue of men she scorne,  
 She yet forgets, that she of men was kynded :  
 And foth oft seene, that proudest harts base loue hath  
 blynded.

1. 341, 'Fortunes' : l. 346, (*vnlike*).





Certes *Clarinda*, not of cancred will,  
 (Sayd he) nor obstinate disdainedfull mind,  
 I haue forbore this duetie to fulfill :  
 For well I may this weene, by that I fynd,  
 That she a Queene, and come of Princely kynd, 370  
 Both worthie is for to be fewd vnto,  
 Chiefely by him, whose life her law doth bynd,  
 And eke of powre her owne doome to vndo,  
 And alf' of princely grace to be inclyn'd thereto.

But / want of meanes hath bene mine onely let,  
 From seeking fauour, where it doth abound ;  
 Which if I might by your good officé get,  
 I to your selfe should rest for euer bound,  
 And readie to deserue, what grace I found.  
 She feeling him thus bite vpon the bayt, 380  
 Yet doubting least his hold was but vnfound,  
 And not well fastened, would not strike him strayt,  
 But drew him on with hope, fit leasure to awayt.

But foolish Mayd, whyles heedlesse of the hooke,  
 She thus oft times was beating off and on,  
 Through slipperie footing, fell into the brooke,  
 And there was caught to her confusion.  
 For seeking thus to salue the Amazon,  
 She wounded was with her deceipts owne dart,  
 And gan thenceforth to cast affection, 390  
 Conceiued close in her beguiled hart,  
 To *Artégall*, through pittie of his causelesse smart.

Yet durst she not disclofe her fancies wound,  
 Ne to himselfe, for doubt of being sdayned,

1. 367, '*she*' (misprint).

Ne yet to any other wight on ground,  
For feare her mistresse shold haue knowledge gayned,  
But to her selfe it secretly retayned,  
Within the clofet of her couert brest :  
The more thereby her tender hart was payned.  
Yet to awayt fit time she weened best, 400  
And fairely did diffemble her sad thoughts vnrest.

One day her Ladie, calling her apart,  
Gan to demaund of her some tydings good,  
Touching her loues successe, her lingring smart.  
Therewith she gan at first to change her mood, /  
As one adaw'd, and halfe confused stood ;  
But quickly she it ouerpast, so soone  
As she her face had wypt, to fresh her blood :  
Tho gan she tell her all, that she had donne,  
And all the wayes she fought, his loue for to haue wonne.

But sayd, that he was obstinate and sterne, 411  
Scorning her offers and conditions vaine ;  
Ne would be taught with any termes, to lerne  
So fond a lesson, as to loue againe.  
Die rather would he in penurious paine,  
And his abridged dayes in dolour wast,  
Then his foes loue or liking entertaine :  
His resolution was both first and last,  
His bodie was her thrall, his hart was freely plapt.

Which when the cruell Amazon perceiued, 420  
She gan to storme, and rage, and rend her gall,  
For very fell despight, which she conceiued,  
To be so scorned of a base borne thrall,

Whose life did lie in her leaft eye-lids fall ;  
 Of which ſhe vow'd with many a curſed threat,  
 That ſhe therefore would him ere long forfall.  
 Nathleſſe when calmed was her furious heat,  
 She chang'd that threatfull mood, & mildly gan entreat.

What now is left *Clarinda* ? what remains,  
 That we may compaſſe this our enterprize ? 430  
 Great ſhame to loſe ſo long employed paines,  
 And greater ſhame t'abide ſo great miſprize,  
 With which he dares our offers thus deſpize.  
 Yet that his guilt the greater may appeare,  
 And more my gracious mercie by this wiſe,  
 I will a while with his firſt folly beare,  
 Till thou haue tride againe, & tempted him more neare.

Say, / and do all, that may thereto preuaile ;  
 Leaue nought vnpromiſt, that may him perſwade ;  
 Life, freedome, grace, and gifts of great auaile, 441  
 With which the Gods themſelues are mylder made :  
 Thereto adde art, euen womens witty trade,  
 The art of mightie words, that men can charme ;  
 With which in caſe thou canſt him not inuade,  
 Let him feele hardneſſe of thy heauie arme:  
 Who will not ſtoupe with good, ſhall be made ſtoupe  
 with harme.

Some of his diet doe from him withdraw ;  
 For I him find to be too proudly fed.  
 Giue him more labour, and with ſtreighter law, 450  
 That he with worke may be forwearied.

Let him lodge hard, and lie in strawen bed,  
That may pull downe the courage of his pride ;  
And lay vpon him, for his greater dread,  
Cold yron chaines, with which let him be tide ;  
And let, what euer he defires, be him denide.

When thou hast all this doen, then bring me newes  
Of his demeane : thenceforth not like a louer,  
But like a rebell stout I will him vse.  
For I resolue this siege not to giue ouer, 460  
Till I the conquest of my will recouer.  
So she departed, full of grieve and sdaine,  
Which inly did to great impatience moue her.  
But the false mayden shortly turn'd againe  
Vnto the prizon, where her hart did thrall remaine.

There all her subtile nets she did vnfold,  
And all the engins of her wit display ;  
In which she meant him warelesse to enfold,  
And of his innocence to make her pray. /  
So cunningly she wrought her crafts assay, 470  
That both her Ladie, and her selfe withall,  
And eke the knight attonce she did betray :  
But most the knight, whom she with guilefull call  
Did cast for to allure, into her trap to fall.

As a bad Nurse, which fayning to receiue  
In her owne mouth the food, ment for her chyld,  
Withholdes it to her selfe, and doeth deceiue  
The infant, so for want of nourture spoyle :  
Euen so *Clarinda* her owne Dame beguyle,  
And turn'd the trust, which was in her affyde, 480  
To feeding of her priuate fire, which boyle

But by no meanes could her thereto perfwade :  
But that in stead thereof, ſhe ſternely bade  
His miſerie to be augmented more,  
And many yron bands on him to lade.  
All which nathleſſe ſhe for his loue forbore :  
So praying him t'accept her ſeruice euermore.

And more then that, ſhe promiſt that ſhe would,  
In caſe ſhe might finde fauour in his eye,  
Deuiſe how to enlarge him out of hould.  
The Fayrie glad to gaine his libertie,  
Can yeeld great thanks for ſuch her curteſie,  
And with faire words, fit for the time and place,  
To feede the humour of her maladie ;  
Promiſt, if ſhe would free him from that caſe,  
He wold by all good means he might, deſerue  
grace.

So / daily he faire ſemblant did her ſhew,  
Yet neuer meant he in his noble mind,  
To his owne abſent loue to be vntrew :  
Ne euer did deceitfull *Clarín* find  
In her falſe hart, his bondage to vnbind ;  
But rather how ſhe mote him faſter tye.  
Therefore vnto her miſtreſſe moſt vnkind

She daily told, her loue he did defye,  
And him she told, her Dame his freedome did denye.

Yet thus much friendship she to him did shew, . 511  
That his scarfe diet somewhat was amended,  
And his worke lessened, that his loue mote grow :  
Yet to her Dame him still she discommended,  
That she with him mote be the more offended.  
Thus he long while in thraldome there remainyd,  
Of both beloued well, but litle frended ;  
Vntill his owne true loue his freedome gayned,  
Which in an other Canto will be best containyd. / 519

### Cant. VI.

*Talus brings newes to Britomart  
of Artegals mishap,  
She goes to seeke him, Dolon meetes  
who seekes her to entrap.*

Some men, I wote, will deeme in *Artegall*  
Great weaknesse, and report of him much ill,  
For yeelding so himselfe a wretched thrall,  
To th'insolent commaund of womens will ;  
That all his former praise doth fowly spill. 10  
But he the man, that say or doe so dare,  
Be well aduiz'd, that he stand stedfast still :

For neuer yet was wight so well aware,  
But he at first or laft was trapt in womens fnare.

Yet in the streightnesse of that captiue state,  
This gentle knight himfelfe so well behaued,  
That notwithstanding all the subtill bait,  
With which those Amazons his loue still craued,  
To his owne loue his loialtie he faued :  
Whose character in th'Adamantine mould                    20  
Of his true hart so firmly was engraued,  
That no new loues impreffion euer could  
Bereaue it thence: fuch blot his honour blemish should.

Yet his owne loue, the noble *Britomart*,  
Scarfe so conceiued in her iealous thought,  
What time sad tydings of his balefull smart  
In womans bondage, *Talus* to her brought ;  
Brought / in vntimely houre, ere it was fought.  
For after that the vtmost date, assynde  
For his returne, she waited had for nought,                    30  
She gan to cast in her misdoubtfull mynde  
A thousand seares, that loue-ficke fancies faine to fynde.

Sometime she feared, leaft some hard mishap,  
Had him misfalne in his aduenturous quest ;  
Sometime leaft his false foe did him entrap  
In traytrous traine, or had vnwares opprest :  
But most she did her troubled mynd moleft,  
And secretly affliēt with iealous feare,  
Leaft some new loue had him from her posselt ;  
Yet loth she was, since she no ill did heare,                    40  
To thinke of him so ill : yet could she not forbear.

One while she blam'd her felfe ; another whyle  
She him condemn'd, as trustlesse and vntrew :  
And then, her grieve with errour to beguyle,  
She fayn'd to count the time againe anew,  
As if before she had not counted trew.  
For houres but dayes ; for weekes, that passed were,  
She told but moneths, to make them seeme more few :  
Yet when she reckned them, still drawing neare, 49  
Each hour did seeme a moneth, & every moneth a yeare.

But when as yet she saw him not returne,  
She thought to send some one to seeke him out ;  
But none she found so fit to serve that turne,  
As her owne felfe, to ease her felfe of doubt.  
Now she deuiz'd amongst the warlike rout  
Of errant Knights, to seeke her errant Knight ;  
And then againe resolu'd to hunt him out  
Amongst loose Ladies, lapped in delight :  
And then both Knights enuide, & Ladies eke did spight. /

One day, when as she long had sought for ease 60  
In every place, and every place thought best,  
Yet found no place, that could her liking please,  
She to a window came, that opened West,  
Towards which coast her loue his way addrest.  
There looking forth, shee in her heart did find  
Many vaine fancies, working her vnrest ;  
And sent her winged thoughts, more swift then wind,  
To beare vnto her loue the message of her mind.

ll. 47-8, Church suggests :—

For dayes, but houres ; for moneths that passed were,  
She told but weekes, etc.

See Life in Vol. I., and Glossary, *s.v.*



There as she looked long, at last she spide,  
 One comming towards her with hasty speede : 70  
 Well weend she then, ere him she plaine descride,  
 That it was one sent from her loue indeede.  
 Who when he nigh approcht, shee mote arede  
 That it was *Talus*, *Artegall* his groome ;  
 Whereat her heart was fild with hope and drede ;  
 Ne would she stay, till he in place could come,  
 But ran to meete him forth, to know his tidings somme.

Euen in the dore him meeting, she begun ;  
 And where is he thy Lord, and how far hence ?  
 Declare at once ; and hath he lost or wun ? 80  
 The yron man, albe he wanted sence  
 And forrowes feeling, yet with conscience  
 Of his ill newes, did inly chill and quake,  
 And stood still mute, as one in great suspence  
 As if that by his silence he would make  
 Her rather reade his meaning, then him selfe it spake,

Till she againe thus sayd ; *Talus* be bold,  
 And tell what euer it be, good or bad,  
 That from thy tongue thy hearts intent doth hold.  
 To whom he thus at length. The tidings sad, 90  
 That / I would hide, will needs, I see, be rad.  
 My Lord, your loue, by hard mishap doth lie  
 In wretched bondage, wofully bestad.  
 Ay me (quoth she) what wicked destinie ?  
 And is he vanquisht by his tyrant enemy ?

Not by that Tyrant, his intended foe ;  
 But by a Tyranneffe (he then replide,)

That him captiued hath in haplesse woe.  
 Cease thou bad newes-man, badly doest thou hide  
 Thy maisters shame, in harlots bondage tide. 100  
 The rest my selfe too readily can spell.  
 With that in rage she turn'd from him aside,  
 Forcing in vaine the rest to her to tell,  
 And to her chamber went like solitary cell.

There she began to make her monefull plaint  
 Against her Knight, for being so vntrew ;  
 And him to touch with falshoods fowle attaint,  
 That all his other honour ouerthrew.  
 Oft did she blame her selfe, and often rew,  
 For yeelding to a straungers loue so light, 110  
 Whose life and manners straunge she neuer knew ;  
 And euermore she did him sharply twight  
 For breach of faith to her, which he had firmly plight.

And then she in her wrathfull will did cast,  
 How to reuenge that blot of honour blent ;  
 To fight with him, and goodly die her last :  
 And then againe she did her selfe torment,  
 Inflicting on her selfe his punishment,  
 A while she walkt, and chaust ; a while she threw  
 Her selfe vpon her bed, and did lament : 120  
 Yet did she not lament with loude alew,  
 As women wont, but with deepe fighes, and singulfs  
 few. /

Like as a wayward childe, whose fonder sleepe  
 Is broken with some fearefull dreames affright,

l. 103, within ( ) : l. 122, 'singulfs'.

With froward will doth set him selfe to weepe ;  
 Ne can be stild for all his nurfes might,  
 But kicks, and squals, and shriekes for fell despight :  
 Now scratching her, and her loose locks misufing ;  
 Now seeking darkenesse, and now seeking light ;  
 Then crauing sucke, and then the sucke refusing, 130  
 Such was this Ladies fit, in her loues fond accusing.

But when she had with such vnquiet fits  
 Her selfe there clofe afflicted long in vaine,  
 Yet found no easement in her troubled wits,  
 She vnto *Talus* forth return'd againe,  
 By change of place seeking to ease her paine ;  
 And gan enquire of him, with mylder mood,  
 The certaine cause of *Artegals* detaine ;  
 And what he did, and in what state he stood,  
 And whether he did woo, or whether he were woo'd.

Ah wellaway (sayd then the yron man,) 141  
 That he is not the while in state to woo ;  
 But lies in wretched thraldome, weake and wan,  
 Not by strong hand compelled thereunto,  
 But his owne doome, that none can now vndoo.  
 Sayd I not then (quoth shee) erwhile aright,  
 That this is things compacte betwixt you two,  
 Me to deceiue of faith vnto me plight,  
 Since that he was not forst, nor ouercome in fight ?

With that he gan at large to her dilate 150  
 The whole discourse of his captiuanee sad,

1. 147, Dr. Morris notes on this—"Mr. J. P. Collier, following Church, reads '*thing compacte*' = a concerted thing. But the clause may stand if we look upon *things* as in the genitive case."

In fort as ye haue heard the fame of late.  
 All which when she with hard enduraunce had  
 Heard / to the end, she was right fore bestad,  
 With sodaine stounds of wrath and grieve attone :  
 Ne would abide, till she had aunswere made,  
 But streight her selfe did dight, and armor don ;  
 And mounting to her steede, bad *Talus* guide her on.

So forth she rode vpon her ready way,  
 To seeke her Knight, as *Talus* her did guide : 160  
 Sadly she rode, and neuer word did say,  
 Nor good nor bad, ne euer lookt aside,  
 But still right downe, and in her thought did hide  
 The felnesse of her heart, right fully bent  
 To fierce auengement of that womans pride,  
 Which had her Lord in her base prison pent,  
 And so great honour with so fowle reproch had blent.

So as she thus melancholicke did ride,  
 Chawing the cud of grieve and inward paine,  
 She chaunst to meete toward th'euen-tide 170  
 A Knight, that softly paced on the plaine,  
 As if him selfe to solace he were faine.  
 Well shot in yeares he seem'd, and rather bent  
 To peace, then needlesse trouble to constraine.  
 As well by view of that his vestiment,  
 As by his modest semblant, that no euill ment.

He comming neare, gan gently her salute  
 With curteous words, in the most comely wize ;  
 Who though desirous rather to rest mute,  
 Then termes to entertaine of common guize, 180

' L 154, 'Heard'—misprinted 'Here' in '96 : l. 177, . after 'salute' of '96, removed.

Yet rather then she kindnesse would despize,  
 She would her selfe displease, fo him requite.  
 Then gan the other further to deuize  
 Of things abrode, as next to hand did light,  
 And many things demaund, to which she answer'd  
 light./

For little lust had she to talke of ought,  
 Or ought to heare, that mote delightfull bee ;  
 Her minde was whole possessed of one thought,  
 That gaue none other place. Which when as hee  
 By outward signes, (as well he might) did see, 190  
 He list no lenger to vse lothfull speach,  
 But her besought to take it well in gree,  
 Sith shady dampe had dimd the heauens reach,  
 To lodge with him that night, vnles good cause empeach.

The Championesse, now seeing night at dore,  
 Was glad to yeeld vnto his good request :  
 And with him went without gaine-faying more.  
 Not farre away, but little wide by West,  
 His dwelling was, to which he him addrest ;  
 Where soone arriuing they receiued were 200  
 In seemely wise, as them befeemed best :  
 For he their host them goodly well did cheare,  
 And talk't of pleafant things, the night away to weare.

Thus passing th'euening well, till time of rest,  
 Then *Britomart* vnto a bowre was brought ;  
 Where grooms awayted her to haue vndrest.  
 But she ne would vndressed be for ought,

Ne doffe her armes, though he her much befought.  
 For she had vow'd, she fayd, not to forgo  
 Those warlike weedes, till she reuenge had wrought  
 Of a late wrong vppon a mortall foe ; 211  
 Which she would sure performe, betide her wele or wo.

Which when their Host perceiu'd, right discontent  
 In minde he grew, for feare leaft by that art  
 He should his purpose misse, which clofe he ment :  
 Yet taking leaue of her, he did depart.  
 There / all that night remained *Britomart*,  
 Restleffe, recomfortleffe, with heart deepe grieved,  
 Not suffering the leaft twinckling sleepe to start  
 Into her eye, which th'heart mote haue relieued, 220  
 But if the leaft appear'd, her eyes she streight reprieued.

Ye guilty eyes (fayd she) the which with guyle  
 My heart at first betrayd, will ye betray  
 My life now to, for which a little whyle  
 Ye will not watch ? false watches, wellaway,  
 I wote when ye did watch both night and day  
 Vnto your losse : and now needes will ye sleepe ?  
 Now ye haue made my heart to wake alway,  
 Now will ye sleepe ? ah wake, and rather weepe,  
 To thinke of your [k]nights want, that should yee waking  
 keepe. 230

Thus did she watch, and weare the weary night  
 In wayfull plaints, that none was to appease ;  
 Now walking soft, now sitting still vpright,  
 As sundry chaunge her seemed best to ease.

l. 230, '[K] nights'—as Church suggested—obvious correction.

Ne lesse did *Talus* suffer sleepe to feaze  
 His eye-lids sad, but watcht continually,  
 Lying without her dore in great diseafe ;  
 Like to a Spaniell wayting carefully  
 Leaft any should betray his Lady treacherously.

What time the natiue Belman of the night, 240  
 The bird, that warned *Peter* of his fall,  
 Firft rings his filuer Bell t'each sleepy wight,  
 That should their mindes vp to deuotion call,  
 She heard a wondrous noife below the hall.  
 All fodainely the bed, where she should lie,  
 By a false trap was let adowne to fall  
 Into a lower roome, and by and by  
 The loft was rayfd againe, that no man could it  
 fpie. /

With fight whereof she was difmayd right fore,  
 Perceiuing well the treafon, which was ment : 250  
 Yet stirred not at all for doubt of more,  
 But kept her place with courage confident,  
 Wayting what would enfue of that euent.  
 It was not long, before she heard the found  
 Of armed men, comming with clofe intent  
 Towards her chamber ; at which dreadfull found  
 She quickly caught her fword, & fhield about her  
 bound.

With that there came vnto her chamber dore  
 Two Knights, all arm'd ready for to fight,  
 And after them full many other more, 260  
 A rafkall rout, with weapons rudely dight.

Whom soone as *Talus* spide by glims of night,  
 He started vp, there where on ground he lay,  
 And in his hand his thresher ready keight.  
 They seeing that, let driue at him streight way,  
 And round about him preace in riotous aray.

But soone as he began to lay about  
 With his rude yron flaile, they gan to flie,  
 Both armed Knights, and eke vnarmed rout :  
 Yet *Talus* after them apace did plie, 270  
 Where euer in the darke he could them spie ;  
 That here and there like scattred sheepe they lay.  
 Then backe returning, where his Dame did lie,  
 He to her told the story of that fray,  
 And all that treason there intended did bewray.

Wherewith though wondrous wroth, and inly burning,  
 To be auenged for so fowle a deede,  
 Yet being forst to abide the daies returning,  
 She there remain'd, but with right wary heede,  
 Least / any more such practife should proceede. 280  
 Now mote ye know (that which to *Britomart*  
 Vnknownen was) whence all this did proceede,  
 And for what cause so great mischieuous smart  
 Was ment to her, that neuer euill ment in hart.

The goodman of this houle was *Dolon* hight,  
 A man of fubtill wit and wicked minde,  
 That whilome in his youth had bene a Knight,  
 And armes had borne, but little good could finde,



And much lesse honour by that warlike kinde  
 Of life : for he was nothing valorous, 290  
 But with flie shiftes and wiles did vnderminde  
 All noble Knights, which were aduenturous,  
 And many brought to shame by treafon treacherous.

He had three fonnes, all three like fathers fonnes,  
 Like treacherous, like full of fraud and guile,  
 Of all that on this earthly compasse wonnes :  
 The eldest of the which was slaine erewhile  
 By *Artegall*, through his owne guilty wile ;  
 His name was *Guizor*, whose vntimely fate  
 For to auenge, full many treafons vile 300  
 His father *Dolon* had deuiz'd of late  
 With these his wicked sons, and shewd his cankred hate.

For sure he weend, that this his present guest  
 Was *Artegall*, by many tokens plaine ;  
 But chiefly by that yron page he ghest,  
 Which still was wont with *Artegall* remaine ;  
 And therefore ment him surely to haue slaine.  
 But by Gods grace, and her good heedinesse,  
 She was preferued from their traytrous traine.  
 Thus she all night wore out in watchfulnesse, 310  
 Ne suffred slothfull sleepe her eyelids to oppresse, /

The morrow next, so soone as dawning houre  
 Discouered had the light to liuing eye,  
 She forth ysfew'd out of her loathed bowre,  
 With full intent t'auenge that villany,

l. 291, 'did'—Dr. Morris queries '? had'—surely not ? l. 300, 'revenge'  
 l. 309, 'that' (1611).

On that vilde man, and all his family.  
 And comming down to seeke them, where they wond,  
 Nor fire, nor fonnes, nor any could she spie :  
 Each rowme she fought, but them all empty fond :  
 They all were fled for feare, but whether, nether kond.

She saw it vaine to make there lenger stay, 321  
 But tooke her steede, and thereon mounting light,  
 Gan her addresse vnto her former way.  
 She had not rid the mountenance of a flight,  
 But that she saw there present in her sight,  
 Those two false brethren, on that perillous Bridge,  
 On which *Pollente* with *Artegall* did fight.  
 Streight was the passage like a ploughed ridge,  
 That if two met, the one mote needes fall ouer the lidge.

There they did thinke them selues on her to wreake :  
 Who as she nigh vnto them drew, the one 331  
 These vile reproches gan vnto her speake ;  
 Thou recreant false traytor, that with lone  
 Of armes hast knighthood stolne, yet Knight art none  
 No more shall now the darknesse of the night  
 Defend thee from the vengeance of thy sone,  
 But with thy bloud thou shalt appease the spright  
 Of *Guizor*, by thee slaine, and mured by thy flight.

Strange were the words in *Britomartis* eare ;  
 Yet stayd she not for them, but forward fared, 340  
 Till to the perillous Bridge she came, and there  
*Talus* desir'd, that he might haue prepared  
 The / way to her, and those two losels scared.

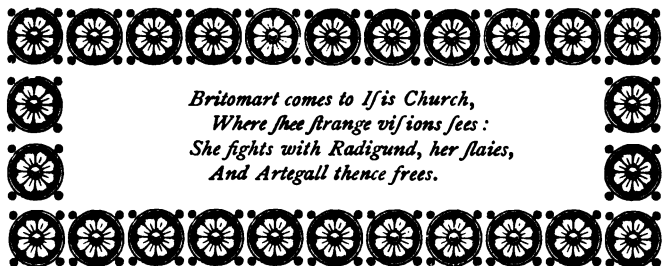
L. 316, 'vile' and . (period) supplied for nothing in '96.

But she thereat was wroth, that for despight  
The glauncing sparkles through her beuer glared,  
And from her eies did flash out fiery light,  
Like coles, that through a filuer Censer sparkle bright.

She stayd not to aduise which way to take ;  
But putting spurres vnto her fiery beast,  
Thorough the midst of them she way did make. 350  
The one of them, which most her wrath increast,  
Vppon her speare she bore before her breast,  
Till to the Bridges further end she past,  
Where falling downe, his challenge he releast :  
The other ouer side the Bridge she cast  
Into the riuer, where he drunke his deadly last.

As when the flashing Leuin haps to light  
Vppon two stubborne oakes, which stand so neare,  
That way betwixt them none appeares in fight ;  
The Engin fiercely flying forth, doth teare 360  
Th'one from the earth, & through the aire doth beare ;  
The other it with force doth ouerthrow,  
Vppon one side, and from his rootes doth reare.  
So did the Championesse those two there strow,  
And to their fire their carcasses left to bestow. /

## Cant. VII.



Nought is on earth more sacred, or diuine,  
That Gods and men doe equally adore,  
Then this fame vertue, that doth right define :  
For th'heuens thēselues, whence mortal men implore  
Right in their wrongs, are rul'd by righteous lore 10  
Of higheft *Ioue*, who doth true iustice deale  
To his inferiour Gods, and euer more  
Therewith contains his heauenly Common-weale,  
The skill whereof to Princes hearts he doth reueale.

Well wherefore did the antique world inuent,  
That Iustice was a God of soueraine grace,  
And altars vnto him, and temples lent,  
And heauenly honours in the highest place ;  
Calling him great *Osyris*, of the race  
Of th'old Ægyptian Kings, that whylome were ; 20  
With fayned colours, shading a true case :  
For that *Osyris*, whilest he liued here,  
The iustest man aliue, and truest did appeare.

His wife was *I/is*, whom they likewise made  
 A Goddesse of great powre and souerainty  
 And in her person cunningly did shade  
 That part of Iustice, which is Equity,  
 Whereof / I haue to treat here presently.  
 Vnto whose temple when as *Britomart*  
 Arriued, shee with great humility 30  
 Did enter in, ne would that night depart ;  
 But *Talus* mote not be admitted to her part.

There she receiued was in goodly wize  
 Of many Priests, which duely did attend  
 Vppon the rites and daily sacrifice,  
 All clad in linnen robes with siluer hemd ;  
 And on their heads with long locks comely kemd,  
 They wore rich Mitres shaped like the Moone,  
 To shew that *I/is* doth the Moone portend ;  
 Like as *O/syris* signifies the Sunne. 40  
 For that they both like race in equall iustice runne.

The Championesse them greeting, as she could,  
 Was thence by them into the Temple led ;  
 Whose goodly building when she did behould,  
 Borne vppon stately pillours, all dispred  
 With shining gold, and arched ouer hed,  
 She wondred at the workemans passing skill,  
 Whose like before she neuer saw nor red ;  
 And thereuppon long while stood gazing still,  
 But thought, that she thereon could neuer gaze her fill.

Thence forth vnto the Idoll they her brought, 51  
 The which was framed all of siluer fine,

So well as could with cunning hand be wrought,  
 And clothed all in garments made of line,  
 Hemd all about with fringe of siluer twine.  
 Vppon her head she wore a Crowne of gold,  
 To shew that she had powre in things diuine ;  
 And at her feete a Crocodile was rold,  
 That with her wreathed taile her middle did enfold. /

One foote was set vppon the Crocodile, 60  
 And on the ground the other fast did stand,  
 So meaning to suppress both forged guile,  
 And open force : and in her other hand  
 She stretched forth a long white slender wand.  
 Such was the Goddesse ; whom when *Britomart*  
 Had long beheld, her selfe vppon the land  
 She did prostrate, and with right humble hart,  
 Vnto her selfe her silent prayers did impart.

To which the Idoll as it were inclining,  
 Her wand did moue with amiable looke, 70  
 By outward shew her inward sence defining.  
 Who well perceiuing, how her wand she shooke,  
 It as a token of good fortune tooke.  
 By this the day with dampe was ouercast,  
 And ioyous light the house of *Ioue* forfooke :  
 Which when she saw, her helmet she vnlaste,  
 And by the altars side her selfe to slumber plaste.

For other beds the Priests there vsed none,  
 But on their mother Earths deare lap did lie,

l. 59, '*her*'—Church suggests '*his*' ; but all such finicalness is antithetic to Spenser's use and wont : l. 64, '*slender*,' as before : l. 71, query '*defining*'?

And bake their sides vpon the cold hard stone, 80  
 T'enure them felues to fufferaunce thereby,  
 And proud rebellious flesh to mortify.  
 For by the vow of their religion  
 They tied were to stedfaft chaftity,  
 And continence of life ; that all forgon,  
 They mote the better tend to their deuotion.

Therefore they mote not taſte of fleſhly food,  
 Ne feed on ought, the which doth bloud containe,  
 Ne drinke of wine, for wine they ſay is blood,  
 Euen the bloud of Gyants, which were ſlaine, 90  
 By / thundring *Ioue* in the Phlegrean plaine.  
 For which the earth (as they the ſtory tell)  
 Wroth with the Gods, which to perpetuall paine  
 Had damn'd her ſonnes, which gainſt them did rebell,  
 With inward grieve and malice did againſt them ſwell.

And of their vitall bloud, the which was ſhed  
 Into her pregnant boſome, forth ſhe brought  
 The fruitfull vine, whoſe liquor blouddy red  
 Hauing the mindes of men with fury fraught, 100  
 Mote in them ſtirre vp old rebellious thought,  
 To make new warre againſt the Gods againe :  
 Such is the powre of that ſame fruit, that nought  
 The fell contagion may thereof reſtraine,  
 Ne within reaſons rule, her madding mood containe.

There did the warlike Maide her ſelfe reſpoſe,  
 Vnder the wings of *Iſis* all that night,  
 And with ſweete reſt her heauy eyes did cloſe,  
 After that long daies toile and weary plight.

l. 81, , added : in 1609 ; : l. 85, ; for ,—accepted.

Where whilest her earthly parts with soft delight  
 Of sencelesse sleepe did deeply drowned lie, 110  
 There did appeare vnto her heauenly spright  
 A wondrous vifion, which did close implie  
 The course of all her fortune and posteritie.

Her seem'd, as she was doing sacrifice  
 To *Ifis*, deckt with Mitre on her hed,  
 And linnen stole after those Priestes guize,  
 All sodainely she saw transfigured  
 Her linnen stole to robe of scarlet red,  
 And Moone-like Mitre to a Crowne of gold ;  
 That euen she her selfe much wondered 120  
 At such a chaunge, and ioyed to behold  
 Her selfe, adorn'd with gems and iewels manifold. /

And in the midst of her felicity,  
 An hideous tempest seemed from below,  
 To rise through all the Temple sodainely,  
 That from the Altar all about did blow  
 The holy fire, and all the embers strow  
 Vppon the ground : which kindled priuily,  
 Into outragious flames vnwares did grow,  
 That all the Temple put in ieopardy 130  
 Of flaming, and her selfe in great perplexity.

With that the Crocodile, which sleeping lay  
 Vnder the Idols feete in searelesse bowre,  
 Seem'd to awake in horrible difmay,  
 As being troubled with that stormy stowre ;

L. 118, '*to be*' (1611) : *ib.*, , for . and L. 119, ; for ,—accepted : L. 128,  
 for ,—accepted.



And gaping greedy wide, did streight deuoure  
 Both flames and tempest: with which growen great,  
 And swolne with pride of his owne peerelesse powre,  
 He gan to threaten her likewise to eat;  
 But that the Goddesse with her rod him backe did  
 beat.

Tho turning all his pride to humbleffe meeke, 141  
 Him selfe before her feete he lowly threw,  
 And gan for grace and loue of her to seeke:  
 Which she accepting, he so neare her drew,  
 That of his game she soone enwombed grew,  
 And forth did bring a Lion of great might;  
 That shortly did all other beasts subdew.  
 With that she waked, full of fearefull fright,  
 And doubtfully dismayd through that so vncouth fight.

So thereuppon long while she musing lay, 150  
 With thousand thoughts feeding her fantasie,  
 Vntill she spide the lampe of lightfome day,  
 Vp-listed in the porch of heauen hie.  
 Then / vp she rose fraught with melancholy,  
 And forth into the lower parts did pas;  
 Whereas the Priestes she found full busily  
 About their holy things for morrow Mas:  
 Whom she saluting faire, faire resaluted was.

But by the change of her vnchearefull looke,  
 They might perceiue, she was not well in plight;  
 Or that some pensiueneesse to heart she tooke. 161  
 Therefore thus one of them, who seem'd in fight

To be the greatest, and the grauest wight,  
To her bespake ; Sir Knight it seemes to me,  
That thorough euill rest of this last night,  
Or ill apayd, or much dismayd ye be,  
That by your change of cheare is easie for to see.

Certes (sayd she) sith ye so well haue spide  
The troublous passion of my pensiue mind,  
I will not seeke the same from you to hide, 170  
But will my cares vnfolde, in hope to find  
Your aide, to guide me out of errorr blind.  
Say on (quoth he) the secret of your hart :  
For by the holy vow, which me doth bind,  
I am adiur'd, best counsell to impart  
To all, that shall require my comfort in their smart.

Then gan she to declare the whole discourse  
Of all that vision, which to her appeared,  
As well as to her minde it had recourse.  
All which when he vnto the end had heard, 180  
Like to a weake faint-hearted man he fared,  
Through great astonishment of that strange sight ;  
And with long locks vp-standing, stifly stared  
Like one adawed with some dreadfull spright.  
So fild with heauenly fury, thus he her behight. /

Magnificke Virgin, that in queint disguise  
Of British armes doest maske thy royall blood,  
So to pursue a perillous emprise,  
How coul[d]st thou weene, through that disguised hood,  
To hide thy state from being vnderstood ? 190

Can from th'immortall Gods ought hidden bee ?  
 They doe thy lineage, and thy Lordly brood ;  
 They doe thy fire, lamenting fore for thee ;  
 They doe thy loue, forlorne in womens thraldome see.

The end whereof, and all the long euent,  
 They doe to thee in this same dreame discover.  
 For that same Crocodile doth represent  
 The righteous Knight, that is thy faithfull louer.  
 Like to *Osyris* in all iust endeuer.  
 For that same Crocodile *Osyris* is,  
 That vnder *Ifis* feete doth sleepe for euer : 200  
 To shew that clemence oft in things amis,  
 Restraines those sterne behests, and cruell doomes of his.

That Knight shall all the troublous stormes assuage,  
 And raging flames, that many foes shall reare,  
 To hinder thee from the iust heritage  
 Of thy fires Crowne, and from thy countrey deare.  
 Then shalt thou take him to thy loued fere,  
 And ioyne in equal portion of thy realme :  
 And afterwards a sonne to him shalt beare, 210  
 That Lion-like shall shew his powre extreame.  
 So bleffe thee God, and giue thee ioyance of thy dreame

All which when she vnto the end had heard,  
 She much was eased in her troublous thought,  
 And on those Priests bestowed rich reward :  
 And royall gifts of gold and siluer wrought,  
 She / for a present to their Goddesse brought.  
 Then taking leaue of them, she forward went,  
 To seeke her loue, where he was to be fought ;

Ne refted till ſhe came without relent      220  
Vnto the land of Amazons, as ſhe was bent.

Whereof when newes to *Radigund* was brought,  
Not with amaze, as women wonted bee,  
She was confused in her troublous thought,  
But fild with courage and with ioyous glee,  
As glad to heare of armes, the which now ſhe  
Had long furceaſt, ſhe bad to open bold,  
That ſhe the face of her new foe might ſee.  
But when they of that yron man had told,  
Which late her folke had flaine, ſhe bad thẽ forth to  
hold.      230

So there without the gate (as ſeemed beſt)  
She cauſed her Pauilion be pight ;  
In which ſtout *Britomart* her ſelfe did reſt,  
Whiles *Talus* watched at the dore all night.  
All night likewiſe, they of the towne in fright,  
Vppon their wall good watch and ward did keepe.  
The morrow next, ſo ſoone as dawning light  
Bad doe away the dampe of drouzie ſleepe,  
The warlike Amazon out of her bowre did peepe ;

And cauſed ſtreight a Trumpet loud to ſhrill,      240  
To warne her foe to battell ſoone be preſt :  
Who long before awoke (for ſhe ful ill  
Could ſleepe all night, that in vnquiet breſt  
Did cloſely harbour ſuch a icalous gueſt)  
Was to the battell whilome ready dight.  
Eftſoones that warrioureſſe with haughty creſt

l. 230, . —accepted, and l. 239, ; for period (.), and , for (.) l. 256.

Did forth issue, all ready for the fight :  
On th'other side her foe appeared soone in fight. /

But ere they reared hand, the Amazone  
Began the streight conditions to propound, 250  
With which she vsed still to tie her sone ;  
To serue her so, as she the rest had bound.  
Which when the other heard, she sternly frownd  
For high disdaine of such indignity,  
And would no lenger treat, but bad them found.  
For her no other termes should euer tie,  
Then what prescribed were by lawes of cheualrie.

The Trumpets sound, and they together run  
With greedy rage, and with their faulchins smot ;  
Ne either sought the others strokes to shun, 260  
But through great fury both their skill forgot,  
And practicke vse in armes : ne spared not  
Their dainty parts, which nature had created  
So faire and tender, without staine or spot,  
For other vses, then they them translated ;  
Which they now hackt & hewd, as if such vse they  
hated,

As when a Tygre and a Lionesse  
Are met at spoyling of some hungry pray,  
Both challenge it with equall greedinesse :  
But first the Tygre clawes thereon did lay ; 270  
And therefore loth to loose her right away,  
Doth in defence thereof full stoutly stond :  
To which the Lion strongly doth gaine say,  
That she to hunt the beaft first tooke in hond ;  
And therefore ought it haue, where euer she it fond.

Full fiercely layde the Amazon about,  
And dealt her blowes vnmercifully fore :  
Which *Britomart* withstood with courage stout,  
And them repaide againe with double more.  
So / long they fought, that all the graffie flore 280  
Was fild with bloud, which from their sides did flow,  
And gushed through their armes, that all in gore  
They trode, and on the ground their liues did strow,  
Like fruitles seede, of which vntimely death should grow.

At last proud *Radigund* with sell despight,  
Hauing by chaunce espide aduantage neare,  
Let driue at her with all her dreadfull might,  
And thus vpbayding sayd ; This token beare  
Vnto the man, whom thou doest loue so deare ;  
And tell him for his sake thy life thou gauest. 290  
Which spitefull words she fore engrieu'd to heare,  
Thus answer'd ; Lewdly thou my loue deprauest,  
Who shortly must repent that now so vainely brauest.

Nath'lesse that stroke so cruell passage found,  
That glauncing on her shoulder plate, it bit  
Vnto the bone, and made a griesly wound,  
That she her shield through raging smart of it  
Could scarfe vphold ; yet soone she it requit.  
For hauing force increast through furious paine,  
She her so rudely on the helmet smit, 300  
That it empierced to the very braine,  
And her proud person low prostrated on the plaine.

Where being layd, the wrothfull Britoness  
Stayd not, till she came to her selfe againe,

But in reuenge both of her loues distresse,  
 And her late vile reproch, though vaunted vaine,  
 And also of her wound, which fore did paine,  
 She with one stroke both head and helmet cleft.  
 Which dreadfull fight, when all her warlike traine  
 There present saw, each one of sence bereft, 310  
 Fled fast into the towne, and her sole victor left. /

But yet so fast they could not home retrate,  
 But that the swift *Talus* did the formost win ;  
 And preffing through the preace vnto the gate,  
 Pelmell with them attonce did enter in.  
 There then a piteous slaughter did begin :  
 For all that euer came within his reach,  
 He with his yron flae did thresh so thin,  
 That he no worke at all left for the leach :  
 Like to an hideous storme, which nothing may empeach.

And now by this the noble Conqueresse 321  
 Her selfe came in, her glory to partake ;  
 Where though reuengefull vow she did professe,  
 Yet when she saw the heapes, which he did make,  
 Of slaughtred carkasses, her heart did quake  
 For very ruth, which did it almost riue,  
 That she his fury willed him to flake :  
 For else he sure had left not one aliue,  
 But all in his reuenge of spirite would depriue.

Tho when she had his execution stayd, 330  
 She for that yron prison did enquire,  
 In which her wretched loue was captiue layd :  
 Which breaking open with indignant ire,

l. 310, (of . . . bereft).

She entred into all the partes entire.  
 Where when she saw that lothly vncouth fight,  
 Of men disguiz'd in womanishe attire,  
 Her heart gan grudge, for very deepe despight  
 Of so vnmanly maske, in misery midfright.

At last when as to her owne Loue she came,  
 Whom like disguise no lesse deformed had, 340  
 At sight thereof abasht with secrete shame,  
 She turnd her head aside, as nothing glad,  
 To / haue beheld a spectacle so bad :  
 And then too well beleeu'd, that which tofore  
 Iealous suspect as true vntruely drad.  
 Which vaine conceipt now nourishing no more,  
 She fought with ruth to salue his sad misfortunes fore.

Not so great wonder and astonishment,  
 Did the most chaste *Penelope* possesse,  
 To see her Lord, that was reported drent, 350  
 And dead long since in dolorous distresse,  
 Come home to her in piteous wretchednesse,  
 After long trauell of full twenty yeares,  
 That she knew not his fauours likelynesse,  
 For many scarres and many hoary heares,  
 But stood long staring on him, mongst vncertaine feares.

Ah my deare Lord, what sight is this (quoth she)  
 What May-game hath misfortune made of you ?  
 Where is that dreadfull manly looke ? where be  
 Those mighty palmes, the which ye wont t'embrew

l. 343, 'sad' : l. 345, 'for' — accepted.



In bloud of Kings, and great hoastes to subdew? 361  
 Could ought on earth so wondrous change haue  
 As to haue robde you of that manly hew? (wrought  
 Could so great courage stouped haue to ought?  
 Then farewell fleshly force; I see thy pride is nought.

Thenceforth she streight into a bowre him brought,  
 And cauld him those vncomely weedes vndight;  
 And in their steede for other rayment sought,  
 Whereof there was great store, and armors bright,  
 Which had bene reft from many a noble Knight;  
 Whom that proud Amazon subdewed had, 371  
 Whilest Fortune fauourd her succeffe in fight,  
 In which when as she him anew had clad,  
 She was reuiu'd, and ioyd much in his semblance glad. /

So there a while they afterwards remained,  
 Him to refresh, and her late wounds to heale:  
 During which space she there as Princes rained,  
 And changing all that forme of common weale,  
 The liberty of women did repeale,  
 Which they had long vsurpt; and them restoring  
 To mens subiection, did true Iustice deale: 381  
 That all they as a Goddesse her adoring,  
 Her wisedome did admire, and hearkned to her loring.

For all those Knights, which long in captiue shade  
 Had shrowded bene, she did from thraldome free;  
 And magistrates of all that city made,  
 And gaue to them great liuing and large fee:

And that they should for euer faithfull bee,  
Made them sweare fealty to *Artegall*.  
Who when him selfe now well recur'd did see, 390  
He purposed to proceed, what so be fall,  
Vppon his first aduenture, which him forth did call.

Full fad and forrowfull was *Britomart*  
For his departure, her new cause of griefe ;  
Yet wisely moderated her owne smart,  
Seeing his honor, which she tendred chiefe,  
Consisted much in that aduentures priefe.  
The care whereof, and hope of his successe  
Gaued vnto her great comfort and reliefe,  
That womanish complaints she did repress, 400  
And tempred for the time her present heauinesse.

There she continu'd for a certaine space,  
Till through his want her woe did more increase :  
Then hoping that the change of aire and place  
Would change her paine, and forrow somewhat ease,  
She / parted thence, her anguish to appease.  
Meane while her noble Lord sir *Artegall*  
Went on his way, ne euer howre did cease,  
Till he redeemed had that Lady thrall :  
That for another Canto will more fitly fall. 410

END OF VOL. VII.

In bloud of Kings, and great hoastes to subdew? 3  
 Could ought on earth so wondrous change haue  
 As to haue robde you of that manly hew? (wroug  
 Could so great courage stouped haue to ought?  
 Then farewell fleshly force; I see thy pride is nough

Thenceforth she streight into a bowre him brought,  
 And cauld him those vncomely weedes vndight;  
 And in their steede for other rayment fought,  
 Whereof there was great store, and armors bright,  
 Which had bene rest from many a noble Knight;  
 Whom that proud Amazon subdewed had, 3  
 Whilest Fortune fauourd her succeffe in fight,  
 In which when as she him anew had clad,  
 She was reuiu'd, and ioyd much in his semblance gla

So there a while they afterwards remained,  
 Him to refresh, and her late wounds to heale:  
 During which space she there as Princes rained,  
 And changing all that forme of common weale,  
 The liberty of women did repeale,  
 Which they had long vsurpt; and them restoring  
 To mens subiection, did true Iustice deale:  
 That all they as a Goddesse her adoring,  
 Her wisedome did admire, and hearkned to her lo

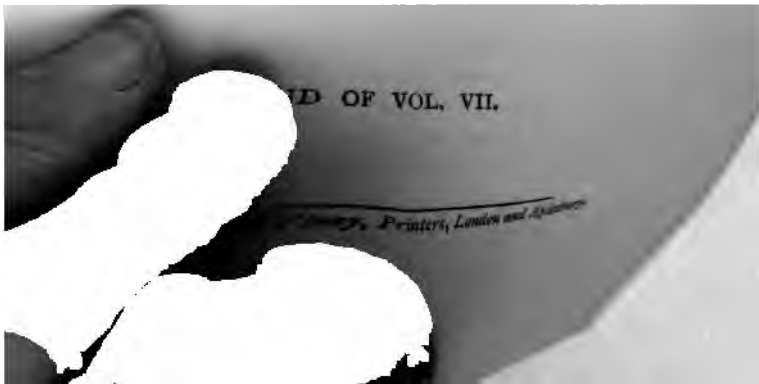
For all those Knights, which long in captiue shad  
 Had shrowded bene, she did from thraldome fr  
 And magistrates of all that city made,  
 And gaue to them great liuing and large fee:

1. 376, 'Princes.'

And that they should for euer faithfull bee,  
 Made them sweare fealty to *Artegall*.  
 Who when him selfe now well recur'd did fee, 390  
 He purpos'd to proceed, what so be fall,  
 Vppon his first aduenture, which him forth did call.

Full fad and forrowfull was *Britomart*  
 For his departure, her new cause of grieve ;  
 Yet wisely moderated her owne smart,  
 Seeing his honor, which she tendred chiefe,  
 Confisted much in that aduentures priefe.  
 The care whereof, and hope of his successe  
 Gaue vnto her great comfort and reliefe,  
 That womanish complaints she did repress, 400  
 And tempred for the time her present heauinesse.

There she continu'd for a certaine space,  
 Till through his want her woe did more increase :  
 Then hoping that the change of aire and place  
 Would change her paine, and sorrow somewhat ease,  
 She / parted thence, her anguish to appease.  
 Meane while her noble Lord fir *Artegall*  
 Went on his way, ne euer howre did cease,  
 Till he redeemed had that Lady thrall :  
**That** for another Canto will more fitly fall. 410

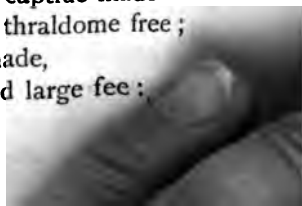


In bloud of Kings, and great hoastes to subdew? 361  
 Could ought on earth so wondrous change haue  
 As to haue robde you of that manly hew? (wrought  
 Could so great courage stouped haue to ought?  
 Then farewell fleshy force; I see thy pride is nought.

Thenceforth she streight into a bowre him brought,  
 And cauld him those vncomely weedes vndight;  
 And in their steede for other rayment fought,  
 Whereof there was great store, and armors bright,  
 Which had bene reft from many a noble Knight;  
 Whom that proud Amazon subdewed had, 371  
 Whilest Fortune fauourd her succeffe in fight,  
 In which when as she him anew had clad,  
 She was reuiu'd, and ioyd much in his semblance glad. /

So there a while they afterwards remained,  
 Him to refresh, and her late wounds to heale:  
 During which space she there as Princes rained,  
 And changing all that forme of common weale,  
 The liberty of women did repeale,  
 Which they had long vsurpt; and them restoring  
 To mens subiection, did true Iustice deale: 381  
 That all they as a Goddesse her adoring,  
 Her wisedome did admire, and hearkned to her loring.


For all those Knights, which long in captiue shade  
 Had shrowded bene, she did from thraldome free;  
 And magistrates of all that city made,  
 And gaue to them great liuing and large fee:



And that they should for euer faithfull bee,  
Made them sweare fealty to *Artegall*.  
Who when him selfe now well recur'd did see, 390  
He purposed to proceed, what so befall,  
Vppon his first aduenture, which him forth did call.

Full sad and forrowfull was *Britomart*  
For his departure, her new cause of grieve ;  
Yet wisely moderated her owne smart,  
Seeing his honor, which she tendred chiefe,  
Consisted much in that aduentures priefe.  
The care whereof, and hope of his successe  
Gave vnto her great comfort and reliefe,  
That womanish complaints she did repress, 400  
And tempred for the time her present heauinesse.

There she continu'd for a certaine space,  
Till through his want her woe did more increase :  
Then hoping that the change of aire and place  
Would change her paine, and forrow somewhat ease,  
She / parted thence, her anguish to appease.  
Meane while her noble Lord sir *Artegall*  
Went on his way, ne euer howre did cease,  
Till he redeemed had that Lady thrall :  
That for another Canto will more fitly fall. 410

END OF VOL. VII.

In bloud of Kings, and great hoastes to subdew? 361  
 Could ought on earth so wondrous change haue  
 As to haue robde you of that manly hew? (wrought  
 Could so great courage stouped haue to ought?  
 Then farewell fleshly force; I see thy pride is nought.

Thenceforth she streight into a bowre him brought,  
 And caud him those vncomely weedes vndight;  
 And in their steede for other rayment fought,  
 Whereof there was great store, and armors bright,  
 Which had bene rest from many a noble Knight;  
 Whom that proud Amazon subdewed had, 371  
 Whilest Fortune fauourd her successe in fight,  
 In which when as she him anew had clad,  
 She was reuiu'd, and ioyd much in his semblance glad. /

So there a while they afterwards remained,  
 Him to refresh, and her late wounds to heale:  
 During which space she there as Princes rained,  
 And changing all that forme of common weale,  
 The liberty of women did repeale,  
 Which they had long vsurpt; and them restoring  
 To mens subiection, did true Iustice deale: 381  
 That all they as a Goddesse her adoring,  
 Her wisedome did admire, and hearkned to her loring.

For all those Knights, which long in captiue shade  
 Had shrowded bene, she did from thraldome free;  
 And magistrates of all that city made,  
 And gaue to them great liuing and large fee;

And that they should for euer faithfull bee,  
Made them sweare fealty to *Artegall*.  
Who when him selfe now well recur'd did see, 390  
He purposd to proceed, what so be fall,  
Vppon his first aduenture, which him forth did call.

Full fad and sorrowfull was *Britomart*  
For his departure, her new cause of griefe ;  
Yet wisely moderated her owne smart,  
Seeing his honor, which she tendred chiefe,  
Consisted much in that aduentures priefe.  
The care whereof, and hope of his successe  
Gauē vnto her great comfort and reliefe,  
That womanish complaints she did repressē, 400  
And tempred for the time her present heauinesse.

There she continu'd for a certaine space,  
Till through his want her woe did more increafe :  
Then hoping that the change of aire and place  
Would change her paine, and sorrow somewhat ease,  
She / parted thence, her anguish to appease.  
Meane while her noble Lord fir *Artegall*  
Went on his way, ne euer howre did cease,  
Till he redeemed had that Lady thrall :  
That for another Canto will more fitly fall. 410

END OF VOL. VII.



[REDACTED]









